

**ACPL ITEM
DISCARDED**


4.2
t9a
.4
t.2
795561

BASEMENT STORAGE

REFERENCE

ACPL ITEM
3 1833 90210
DISCARDED





Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2022 with funding from
Kahle/Austin Foundation

WORKS

v. 4

ANNALS

OF

THE REFORMATION

AND

ESTABLISHMENT OF RELIGION,

AND OTHER VARIOUS OCCURRENCES

IN THE

CHURCH OF ENGLAND,

DURING

QUEEN ELIZABETH'S HAPPY REIGN:

TOGETHER WITH

AN APPENDIX

OF ORIGINAL PAPERS OF STATE, RECORDS, AND LETTERS.

BY JOHN STRYPE, M.A.

A NEW EDITION.

VOL. IV.

v. 4, pt. 2

OXFORD,

AT THE CLARENDON PRESS.

MDCCXXIV.

October 30, 1595. A memorial for defence of dangerous places of the land in several counties: wrote by the lord treasurer; upon apprehension of an invasion from Spain.

1795561

A MEMORIAL of the dangerous places for the landing of the enemy upon the south coast of England, and in the river of Severn at the haven of Milford. With a note of the forces thought meet to be in readiness to defend the same.

Cornwall 8000. The most notable places are Helford, Fawmouth, Foye, and Mountsbay. For the defence of these places, or any other in Cornwall, where the enemy may attempt to land, it is requisite that the lieutenant of the shire, or his deputy in his absence, should make choice of so many of his most principal gentlemen of credit and knowledge in the county, as might take the charge of so many bands as should amount to 4000 men, furnished. 222 And the same to see the same to be truly furnished with armour and weapon. And to be ready to repair to those places in the county, and especially to the havens above mentioned, upon view of the enemy's coming to the coast. And for the more effectual service, every of the said gentlemen, that shall be appointed captains to any of the said bands, shall be directed to carry with them, as parcel of their numbers, as many of their household servants, being able men, with armour and weapon, to the place for defence; and also to make choice of some experimented soldiers, to serve under them, as their lieutenants and officers.

Item, For further succour of this defence, order is to be given, that the lieutenant of Devonshire to give assistance of 4000 men under like principal gentlemen for their captains, with like furniture, of their household servants, and assistance of expert soldiers for their lieutenants, and officers of their bands. For which purpose the lieutenant of Cornwall shall give knowledge to the lieutenants of Devonshire to send his said number to his aid, or so many of them as

ANNO
1595.

he shall think needful upon the landing of the enemy, or upon the entry of the enemy's shipping to the haven with appearance of his purpose to land his said forces within the said haven.

Devonshire 19,000. *Item*, The same order shall be given to the lieutenants there, for the defence of the havens there, of Plymouth, Dartmouth, Torbay, and Salcomb, in this manner following. There shall be 6000 of the numbers of that county, being furnished in like manner, prepared by the lieutenant of Devon. And moreover he shall send to the lieutenant of Cornwall, as he shall find it needful, if the enemy shall not attempt any thing there, to have the number of 4000. And to the lieutenant of Dorset for 3000. And to the lieutenant of Wiltshire for 2000. And to the lieutenant of Somersetshire for 4000. All which numbers the several lieutenants of those counties shall upon demand of the lieutenant of Devon send to his aid, and a certain advertisement of the landing of the enemy, or of his entry into the haven, with appearance to land his forces.

Dorset 14,000. The places of danger there, are the haven of Portland with the isles, and the havens of Pool and Weymouth. For defence whereof the lieutenant there shall put in readiness, under bands of principal gentlemen of the shire, the number of 4000. And for the further succour, as need shall require, he shall have the aid out of Devonshire of 4000, and of Somerset of 4000, and of Wilts 2000. Which numbers the lieutenants of those several shires shall put in order, well furnished with armour and weapon; and under sufficient captains and leaders. And shall send the same to the lieutenant of Dorset, or so many of his said numbers as he shall require.

Hampshire 16,000. The places of most danger there, are the Isle of Wight and the town of Portsmouth. For the defence whereof there shall be provided and made ready 4000 of the forces of Hampshire. And for further succour 2000 out of Wiltshire, and 3000 out of Barkshire, 4000 out of Sussèx, 3000 out of Surrey. Which forces shall be also commanded to be put in readiness by the lieutenants of

the said several shires; and shall be by them, upon the request of the lieutenant of Hampshire, or his deputies, sent to the succour of the said county of Southampton and the Isle of Wight. And yet nevertheless the former orders taken with the lieutenant of Hampshire, with the captain of Portsmouth and of the Isle of Wight, for succouring the said isle and town of Portsmouth, shall not be discontinued. 223

Kent 20,000. The places of most danger are about the Isles of Shepey and Thanet. For the defence whereof there shall be put in readiness by the lieutenant thereof the number of 6000. And for further succour, upon request of the lieutenant of Kent, there shall be sent out of Sussex 4000. Out of Surrey 6000. From the city of London 3000. And from Essex 4000.

Essex 17,000. The place of most danger is Harwich. For succour whereof there shall be put in readiness 6000. And for further supply, as case shall require, there shall be 4000 sent out of Kent. From London 3000. From Hartford 1000. And from Suffolk 3000.

Suffolk 13,300. Upon occasion of landing in any place to the danger of the country, there shall be made ready 5000 of that county. And for further supply, there shall be sent upon request made to the several lieutenants; that is, out of Norfolk 3000. Essex 4000. Cambridge 500. Huntington 300. Hartford 500.

Norfolk 13,800. The place of most danger is Yarmouth. For the defence whereof, or of any other place where the enemy shall attempt to land, there shall be made ready and provided in Norfolk 6000. And for a further supply, out of Suffolk 4000. Out of Lincoln 3000. Out of Cambridgeshire 500. Out of Hunt. 300.

Wales. The special place of danger there is the river of Severn and the haven of Milford. For the defence whereof there shall be made ready in South Wales the number of And as need shall require, there shall be out of the shires of North Wales made ready And for a further supply, out of Herefordshire 1000. Out of Somersetshire 1000. Out of Gloucestershire 1000. Out of

ANNO 1595. Worcestershire 1000. And if cause shall require greater supply, there shall be sent out of Shropshire 1000.

Item, Every lieutenant that shall send a footman to the seacoast of any place, for impeaching of the enemy's landing, he shall also send, for every thousand of footmen, an hundred pioneers, to accompany them with necessary tools, as spades and pickaxes, and such like, to serve for intrenchment for grounds, for stopping of passages, or such necessary things. And that some number of them may have also halberds or bills wherewith to offend the enemy. Allowing some carriages to carry their tools, whereby to make the more expedition.

Letters to the lieutenants.

A memorial of certain things to be inserted in the letters to all the lieutenants of the counties aforesaid.

1st, That every lieutenant, within whose county the enemy shall attempt to land, shall cause all the forces of the horsemen, both lances, light-horse, and petronels, to be in such readiness, as upon the sight of the enemy coming upon
224 the coast to land in any place, the same forces of horsemen shall be directed to make their way to the seacoast, there to behold to what landing place the enemy shall make his course. To which place the horsemen shall direct all their course to impeach their landing.

Item, The lieutenant also shall give order to such forces of footmen as are far distant from the seaside and landing places, to be provided of a number of small nags and horse, and carriages, as heretofore was prescribed unto them, both to carry them with more speed to the place of service, and also to aid them for carriage of their armour and victuals for some few days. Whereof care would be had, and an order given to every captain of a band, to cause some proportion of victuals to be carried, to satisfy the numbers for some reasonable time, until a general provision might be had of a sufficient store of the common charge of the shire, to maintain the numbers during the time of their service.

Item, It would be foreseen, that besides the quantity of

powder, match, and lead, which the shot in every band shall carry with them for their private use, the store also heretofore appointed to be kept in public to be supplied in any defect; and the same to be carried upon some carts, or horseback, to supply the lack that may happen upon the expense of the private men's store.

ANNO
1595.

Item, Every maritime lieutenant, upon the view of the enemy upon the seacoast, shall send for the forces of horse: which shall repair to the next places of the seacoast; there to attend, to see in what place the enemy shall attempt to land; and then to make their course to that place of landing, to impeach the enemy: and so what he shall require farther aid of the other counties, to send him such succours of footmen as before is appointed. He shall also, if he findeth occasion to have the use of horsemen, require the aid of some reasonable number of horsemen: which horsemen shall repair to the next seacoast, there to attend and expect where the enemy shall offer to land: to which place the said horsemen shall repair.

Item, Every lieutenant that shall be required to give aid shall have like consideration to have horse or nags provided to serve the footmen, both for hastening of them to the place of service, and to carry their armour and necessary victuals for them, for some reasonable time. And shall also send with them some further supply of powder, lead, and match, to be taken out of that store which hath been ordered to be in readiness for the whole shire.

Item, Every lieutenant of any maritime county shall cause inquisition to be made, whether any gentleman, or other person of value, having had his habitation within the county, near to the seaside, within the space of one year past, have removed their dwellings, or are departed from their said houses, either out of the county, or to any remote place from their former habitation: which if he shall find any so to have done, he shall charge them in her majesty's name to return to his former habitation; and there to continue with as many in his family as accustomably he was wont to do. And that he also enjoin such persons to provide arms

ANNO and weapons, both for himself and for every man servant in
 1595. his family, being above sixteen years of age. And upon

225 this direction given, the lieutenant shall signify unto her
 majesty the names and conditions of all such persons as
 shall not without delay perform this commandment given
 in her majesty's name. So as the party may be sent for,
 and receive such severe punishment and correction as the
 cause doth require for the common weal.

The lieutenant, as well of the maritime counties, as the
 other counties adjoining, to certify the names of those whom
 they shall appoint to be captains and conductors of those
 men that are appointed for the defence of the landing
 place, &c. And if in the execution of these directions they
 shall find any defaults in any, to certify the same to her
 majesty's privy-council.

*The names of the lieutenants to whom letters are to be
 written for this service.*

Cornwall. Sir Walter Rawleigh.

Devon. The earl of Bath.

Dorset. The lord marquis.

Hampshire. The lord marquis: lord Mountjoy.

Sussex. Lord admiral: lord Buckhurst.

Kent. Lord Cobham.

Essex. Lord treasurer.

Suffolk. Norfolk. Lord chamberlain.

Wilts. Somerset. Earl of Pembroke.

Wales. Earl of Pembroke.

Berkshire. Lord Norris: Mr. Treasurer.

Surrey. Lord admiral.

London. Lord Mayor.

Hartfordshire. Lord treasurer.

Cambridgeshire. Lord North.

Huntingtonshire. Lord S. John.

Lincoln. Lord treasurer.

Herefordshire. Lord Pembroke.

Gloucestershire. Lord Chandois.

Number CLVII.

ANNO
1595.

Young, bishop of Rochester, to the lord treasurer: upon a malicious report, that he was covetous, and kept a miserable house: together with an account of his incomes.

Right honourable, and my very good lord,

BEING at the court with your lordship upon Sunday last, and acquainting you with a report from a suspicion of mine own touching an offence of your lordship's towards me, it pleased you to say, that without any other offence towards me, your lordship had only conceived somewhat like of me: for that it was affirmed by certain that I was noted to be extremely covetous. And that it appeared so to be by my near and miserable house which I kept. For the better satisfying therefore of your lordship in that matter of my housekeeping, and the utter reproof of these sharp, slanderous sycophants, who cease not to blatter out against me, and such as I am, they care not what, to the discrediting and despising of us and our calling; indeed of him who hath called us, whose ministers and servants we be; (*for* 226 *he that despiseth you despiseth me:*) I have set down in this note enclosed faithfully and truly the sum of my yearly revenues and expenses; to serve, not only as a glass for those malicious *Momi*, to behold their impudency, but also as a pattern for them (or whosoever they be else) to imitate; certain prodigal clergymen and laymen excepted, which to spoil of Christ's patrimony, or their own, in epicurism and belly-cheer, and other vaunting and bravery, do pour out they care not what, and would absume Croesus' and Solomon's treasury if they had it.

Whereas it please your lordship for to object unto me my *commendams*: for answer thereunto I do refer any one to the clear yearly value of my bishopric, set down in this note; which doth not amount to above 220*l*. And let that say whether it be needful to have somewhat added unto it by way of *commendam*. Whereunto I will be bold also to add this, that if there be no ease nor abatement of our ex-

ANNO
1595.

cessive payments, this extreme and terrible famine continuing, that, my bishopric and revenues, and commendams notwithstanding, I must be fain, ere it be long, to dissolve my house. In which cogitation I am at present, and to send my servants a begging, and my poor miserable neighbours a starving, for ought they are like to have at my gates.

For other bishoprics, whereof it pleased your lordship also to make some mention, as I have not in my lifetime sought any, so if they be offered, and I lawfully called thereunto, and they meet for me to accept, especially freed from outrageous spoils, (as Norwich was not,) I am not so precise and scrupulous as to refuse. *Honores nec ambiendi, nec recusandi*, hath ever been a maxim in schools; and so taken to be both good philosophy and good divinity among scholars. Thus much I thought good to commit to these my letters. But to meet with the false and sinister reports of some ill-willers of mine, and for the better satisfaction of your lordship; wherein if I may prevail, I shall be right glad, and think myself very much bound unto your good lordship; and so commending the same in my daily prayers to Almighty God's most merciful tuition, I take my leave. From Bromleigh, the 22d of June, 1595.

Your lordship's always to command in Christ,

Jo. Roffens.

Then follow the notes enclosed.

The yearly revenues of the now bishop of Rochester.

Imprimis, The yearly revenue of the bishopric, tenths, subsidies, and other expenses deducted, - ccxxl. and not above.

Item, Commendams, and casualties, *communibus annis*, and not above, (but rather less) - - - cxxl.

In toto cccxli.

Of this in meat and drink only, *communibus annis*, (or rather more, as is to be shewed,) for sixteen or seventeen years together - - - - - ccll.

So there remaineth towards all other charges, viz. reparations of houses and farms, and chancels, removing of householdstuff and furniture, apparelling myself and my wife, 227 maintaining my son at London at school, and liveries, stable-charges, expenses in law and physic, gifts, rewards, and toward the serving of the realm, when it is required, only LXXXXL.

ANNO
1595.

Some are of opinion, (which I have seen also published in print,) that no man can well uphold his state, if he spend above the third part of his yearly revenue in meat and drink. But by that which is above written, it doth appear, that very near three parts of the four are spent in meat and drink.

This therefore being true, besides that the great indignities and injuries done unto me by certain envious traducers in the matter of my housekeeping are made manifest to their utter reproof, I am of opinion, that the like will hardly be found again in England, in any house of honour or worship, unless it be in houses, where all, without all order, is wastefully and prodigally consumed. Of which sort, I am afraid, there be too many nowadays, both of the clergy and the laity.

This that is here set down shall by me, *inspectis sacrosanctis, et in verbo honoris et sacerdotis*, be deposed at such times as I shall be called thereunto.

Jo. Roffen.

This bishop Young was master of Pembroke-hall in Cambridge. Commended for his quickness in government, and readiness in learning. Fit to bridle innovators, not by authority only, but by weight of argument. The character given him by Elmer, bishop of London.

This bishop Young writ notes upon H. Nicolus's book, called Evangelium Regni, and published anno 1579.

ANNO
1595.

Number CLVIII.

Tho. Bilson, warden of Winchester college, to the lord treasurer, soliciting his interest for the bishopric of Worcester.

My very good lord,

I LEARNED of my lord of Canterbury how much I was bound to your honour, for that it pleased you at the first of your own accord, without my suit, to set me down to the deanery of Windsor; which I never refused, as I hear her majesty is now informed; but only acquainted my lord of Canterbury of my oath, which permits me by no means to be absent above eight weeks in the whole year, save only in college affairs. If therefore that presence might content her majesty in the dean of her chapel, which I greatly feared, I would with all duty and thanks accept it. . . . Only this doubt of her majesty's misliking my overmuch absence made me become a humble suitor to your lordship for your assistance to obtain Worcester.

- 228 My lord of Canterbury's favour by friends I have sought: but he is besieged by some about him, that he is not suffered to follow his own inclination, who always spake the best of me, and so continueth, save that, as he now saith, he hath moved her majesty for Dr. James, and cannot recall it. If my lord archbishop were not overcarried by others, this cause would desire no better judge, whether of us twain hath taken more pains in the church, and served her majesty with greater charge. But my facility being surprised by others, I am forced to appeal to your honourable and indifferent wisdom and favour, since her majesty useth the advice of more than one in these matters; and am willing by your lordship's censure to stand or fall, as never meaning to molest friends for any thing that your grave and worthy judgment shall think unfit. Octob. 31, 1595.

Your honour's in all duty,

Tho. Bilson.

He obtained (according to his suit) the said bishopric; and not long after advanced to Winchester.

Number CLIX.

ANNO

1593.

Mr. Henry Savile to the lady Russel; praying her interest with the lord treasurer for the provostship of Eaton.

Right honourable and my very good lady,

AS I was bold with your ladyship at the beginning of my suit, so I must be importunate now at the conclusion. My fortune always hath been hitherto to receive still my despatch by my lord treasurer's only means; so was it when I obtained Merton college in Oxford, and so must it be now for Eaton. Or else I will hope for small good. I know his lordship's favourable opinion of the matter to her majesty, at such opportunity as it shall please him to take, will end the whole matter. Till then, I assure myself it will stick. His honourable promise of favour made to me at Tybalds gave me courage to begin: and her majesty's direct nomination at Nonsuch, which I saw in his lordship's own hand, gave me hope to continue. It remaineth but that his lordship would vouchsafe to perfect his own work with a prosperous and happy conclusion.

To which purpose I pray you, good madam, as hitherto you have been, so still to continue to be my honourable mediator to his lordship. I can make profession of nothing but my poor humble service: which here I do vow to you both. And so take my leave. The 4th of February.

Your honourable ladyship's humbly at commandment,

Hen. Savile.

Number CLX.

229

The vice-chancellor and heads of the university of Cambridge to the lord Burghley, their chancellor: complaining of doctrine preached by P. Baro, D. D. Lady Margaret professor, in his church at St. Mary's. University Regist.

Right honourable,

OUR humble duty remembered. We are right sorry to have such occasion to trouble your lordship, as the peace of

ANNO
1595.

this university and church (which is dear unto us) being brought into peril by the late reviving of new opinions and troublesome controversies among us, hath urged us, in regard of the places we here sustain, not only to be careful for the suppressing of the same to our powers, but also to give your lordship further information hereof, as our honourable head and careful chancellor.

About a year past, among divers others, (who have attempted publicly to teach new and strange opinions in religion,) one Mr. Barret, more bold than the rest, did preach divers popish errors in St. Mary's, to the just offence of many: which he was enjoined to retract. But refused so to do in such sort as hath been prescribed him. With whose fact and opinion your lordship was made acquainted by Dr. Some, the deputy vice-chancellor. Hereby offence and division growing; as after by Dr. Baro's public lectures and determinations in the schools, contrary (as his auditors have informed) to Dr. Whitaker's, and his sounder truth, ever since her majesty's reign: we sent up to London by common consent in November last Dr. Tyndal and Dr. Whitaker, (men especially chosen for that purpose,) for conference with my lord of Canterbury, and other principal divines there; that the controversies being examined, and the truths by their consents confirmed, the contrary errors, and the contention thereabouts, might the rather cease. With whose good travail, with sound consent in truth, such advice and care was taken by certain propositions (containing certain substantial points of religion taught and received in this university and church, during the time of her majesty's reign, and consented unto and practised by the best approved divines, both at home and abroad) for the maintaining of the same truth and peace of the church, as thereby we enjoyed here great and comfortable quiet, until Dr. Baro, in January last, in his sermon *ad clerum* in St. Mary's, contrary to restraint and commandment from the vice-chancellor and the heads, (by renewing again those opinions,) disturbed our peace. Whereby his adherents and disciples were and are much emboldened to maintain false

doctrine, to the corrupting and disturbing of this university and church, if it be not effectually in time prevented.

ANNO
1595.

For remedy hereof we have, (with joint consent and care,) upon complaint preferred by divers bachelors in divinity, proceeded in the examination of the cause, according to our statutes, and usual manner of proceeding in such cases: whereby it appeareth by sufficient testimonies, that Dr. Baro hath offended in such things as his articles had charged him withal.

There is also, since the former, another complaint preferred against him by certain bachelors in divinity, that he hath, not only in that sermon, but also for the space of these fourteen or fifteen years, taught in his lectures, preached in sermons, determined in the schools, and printed in several books, divers points of doctrine, not only contrary to himself, but also contrary to that which hath been taught and read ever since her majesty's reign, and agreeable to the errors of popery: which we know your lordship hath always disliked and hated. So that we, who for the space of many years past have yielded him sundry benefits and favours here in the university, being a stranger, and forborne him when he hath often heretofore been busy and curious in *aliena republica*, broached new and strange questions in religion; now, unless we should be careless of maintaining the truth of religion established, and of our duty in our places, cannot (being resolved and confirmed in that truth of the long professed and received doctrine) but continue to use all good means, and seek at your lordship's hands some effectual remedy hereof; lest, by permitting passage to these errors, the whole body of popery should by little and little break in upon us, to the overthrow of our religion; and consequently the withdrawing of many, here and elsewhere, from true obedience to her majesty.

May it therefore please your good lordship to have an honourable consideration of the premises, and for the better maintaining of peace, and the truth of religion, so long and quietly received in this university and church, to vouchsafe your lordship's good aid and advice; both to the

ANNO
1595.

comfort of us, (wholly consenting and agreeing in judgment,) and all others in the university soundly affectionate; and to the suppression in time, not only of these errors, but also of gross popery, like by such means in time easily to creep in among us; (as we find by late experience it hath dangerously begun.) Thus craving pardon for troubling your lordship, and commending the same in prayer to the Almighty God, we humbly take our leaves. From Cambridge, the 8th of March, 1595.

Your lordship's humble and bounden,
to be commanded,

Roger Goad, pro-can.	Tho. Preston,
R. Some,	Humph. Tyndal,
Tho. Legg,	Jam. Mountague,
Joh. Jegon,	Edm. Barwel,
Tho. Nevyle,	Lawr. Chaderton.

See the further proceeding with Dr. Baro in the Life of Archbishop Whitgift, book iv. chap. 18.

This learned man surrendered his professor's place, and soon after left the university, and retired to the city of
 231 *London, where he lived divers years after; and died anno*
, and was carried decently, six doctors of divinity his
pall-bearers, from his house in the parish, to the church of
St. Olave, Hart-street; attended by the ministers of the
city, according to an order from the bishop of London.
And there the corpse was interred; leaving a large posterity
behind him. His eldest son, Samuel Baro, was a physician,
and lived and died in Lynn-Regis in Norfolk.

Feb. 3, 1575. Mr. Petrus Barrow, licentiatius in jure civili in academia Bituricensi: incorporatus Cantabrigia. Regr. Cantab.

Ann. 1576. Mr. Petrus Barrow, S. Th. P. Cantabr. ibid. This is the first year of his receiving the stipend as lady Margaret professor. Ex computo academice. MSS. Rev. T. B. B. D.

This is subjoined in some remembrance of so remarkable a man.

Number CLXI.

ANNO
1595.

Dr. Goad, vice-chancellor of the university of Cambridge, to their chancellor, the lord Burghley. Complaint of Mr. Covel's sermon. Charging a crime upon some noblemen and bishops.

My good lord,

I THINK meet to signify to your lordship, that since this feast of Christ's nativity, one Mr. Covel, fellow of Christ's college, preaching upon the text, *Domus mea, &c. vos autem fecistis speluncam latronum*, in applying and inveighing against those that did *facere speluncam latronum* in our church, did, offensively and extraordinarily, so charge the noblemen of this land especially; and in some sort also the bishops. As being present, I thought it my duty, not only to call him to answer, which I have done, but also by so fit an occasion, for my better discharge, to give some signification hereof to your lordship. The rather, for that for want of sufficient assistance of heads of colleges, now from home, I can do little in these causes. And also, because I cannot, as yet, by way of counsel and persuasion, induce the said party to make voluntary, convenient, public satisfaction: which I will yet further endeavour.

In the mean time, until I may have necessary assistance required in these cases. And so being further loath to trouble your lordship, &c. From King's college in Cambridge, the 2d of Jan. 1595.

Your lordship's humble and bounden,
to be commanded,

Roger Goad, pro-can.

See some further account of Covel's troubles in the Life of Archbishop Whitgift, book iv. ch. 19.

ANNO
1595.

Number CLXII.

232 *The lord Burghley, high chancellor of the university of Cambridge, to the president and fellows of St. John's college, being divided among themselves; strictly forbidding them from the queen to proceed to the election of a master of that college; Dr. Whitaker, the last master, being lately dead.*

AFTER my hearty commendations. Although I have by my former letters ordered her majesty's commandment should be given unto you, to forbear from all manner of proceeding in the election of a master there, until her majesty might be further informed what were meet to be done in that election for the benefit and quietness of that house; which her majesty's commandment, (she being not only the foundress of that college, but supreme governor in all causes, and over all persons in her dominions, as well ecclesiastical as civil,) she looks to have obeyed by you all and every one of you all in that college: which, I doubt not, but, being notified unto you, you will obey. Yet being newly again by her majesty expressly reiterated to be signified unto you by me, her counsellor, and your chancellor, I do by these presents reiterate her royal commandment unto you, charging you, upon pain of your deprivation, and her majesty's indignation, to forbear to proceed to any election, notwithstanding any local statute of that house; wherewith her majesty hath authority to dispense, until her majesty's further royal pleasure shall be signified unto you: wishing you all charity, quietness, and concord among yourselves in the mean season, &c. 15th of Dec. 1595.

 Number CLXIII.

The chancellor of the university of Cambridge, to the vice-chancellor and heads: to enjoin the fellows of St. John's,

divided among themselves, in the queen's name, to proceed to the election of either Dr. Claiton, or Mr. Stanton, for their master. Dated Dec. 19, 1595.

ANNO
1595.

THIS letter was in answer to one dated Dec. 15, from the vice-chancellor and the heads. He had in a former letter appointed them to acquaint those of St. John's college with the queen's commandment. And accordingly in an assembly, they, the vice-chancellor and heads, had conference with such of that college as seemed to be the heads of the division there; and that they intended to have agreed upon the nomination of some one meet person for the place of 233 master. But when they could not so do, they afterwards determined upon two meet persons, that had been of that company heretofore, and not misliked by such of the fellows whom they called unto them for conference: which two persons were Dr. Webster and Mr. Stanton. And in the conclusion of their letter, the vice-chancellor and the greater part of the heads shewed themselves inclinable to Stanton.

The lord Burghley, their chancellor, in his answer to them, told them, that he had acquainted the queen with what they had done. Who, he writ, had a special care to have both a learned, diligent, and wise person, and also a man agreeable to the whole company, and not inclined to any faction. And that so in the end her majesty did, of those two, according to your opinions, (as he wrote,) like of Mr. Stanton: but since the same time she also hath heard good information made unto her, that one Mr. Dr. Claiton, master of Magdalen college, were a very meet person, the rather because he is unmarried, as the other two are not. And therefore in conclusion, she hath commanded me to signify to you, the vice-chancellor and the heads of the colleges, and so I do, as your chancellor, by her majesty's command, that you should in some assembly with the former heads, call the president of St. John's college, and some convenient equal number of the fellows that seem to be divided in opinion: to whom you shall declare and deliver her majesty's princely and regal resolution; that if they

ANNO
1595.

will have the choice of their master by an election, it shall be free for them to choose one of these two, Mr. Dr. Claiton, or Mr. Stanton: and so they may quietly proceed. If they refuse to promise and yield thereunto, then you must enjoin them, in her majesty's name, as they will avoid her highness' displeasure, to forbear from proceeding to any manner of election. So as her majesty may, according to her royal authority, having the charge of government of the church, for the commonwealth of the college, (whereof she is inevitable foundatrice,) name some one to be master there, as she shall find to be for the benefit and quietness of the house, and furtherance of learning therein. Of which two things she meaneth to have chief respect.

And so committing this matter to your discretion, I do wish most heartily to see some good end thereof: and that such a master may be there, as may bring seeds of concord into the house, being the principal band to continue them in charity. And thereby to proceed in grace and living: whereof no one in the society whosoever shall take more comfort than myself; esteeming and reverencing that college as my best parent, that gave me nouriture to know God truly, and to detest popery: which was above three-score years now past, &c.

234

Number CLXIV.

A speech of the lord treasurer Burghley to the queen and privy-council: for commissioners to be appointed by her majesty for reforming abuses. The year when spoken not inserted, but probably near this year, or not long before. The queen had required a copy of it from him, and was as followeth:

MY dutiful speech, which your highness granted me to pronounce in your royal presence, with the attendance of your royal majesty's most honourable privy-council, &c. in furtherance of your highness' happy service, is;

As there is none godly wise within the civil parts of the

ANNO
1595.

world, but he knoweth how the Almighty hath miraculously, above human hope, not only placed and preserved your majesty in this your own imperial state, but also beautified your supreme government with his manifold divine favours, more plentifully than other princes; so now that it hath pleased his divine wisdom also, who, as himself saith, holdeth your heavenly heart in his hand, as the division of waters, which way soever he will incline it, to move the same, to grant me, a simple one, your royal presence in this affable, benign, and gracious sort; and to admit me to inform in these weighty causes. It resteth, and his holy will is, that your highness should likewise advance his glory, your own honour, and your politic state, by purging and rectifying the same, from all my humbly informed and many mo heinous enormities.

If *civil* law say, that it will be an *innovation*, which oft produceth perils to a peaceable commonweal, let it likewise affirm, that it must needs be dangerous for your majesty to be wiser than other princes in performing the will of God, and in preferring the wealth of your people. But how can it be called an innovation in your majesty's prudent sight, sith your learned wisdom well knoweth, that many, even profane princes, who knew not God, (except in a glimsing,) but being led by the line of moral learning only, and succeeding vicious rulers in government, have repaired the torn estates of their commonwealths very *civilly*. And yet were it small reason to move your majesty to sue so far for examples, when no fewer than eight of your highness' own most noble progenitors, royal kings of this your highness' realm, sithence the last conquest, (upon the whole informations and complaints of their good subjects,) have earnestly endeavoured the like reformatiōns, though not always for the like godly respects, nor in so mild and merciful manner, as the Almighty will induce your majesty to do it. For he will never suffer your sacred mind in punishing to pass the due proportion and method of justice, or to exceed the true limits of mercy, temperance, and truth; wherewith he hath ever heretofore corroborated your im-

ANNO
1395.

perial throne, and ever will do. I think, yea, I dare boldly say, that there is no credible history in the whole world, be
235 it divine or profane, that mentioneth a maiden queen to reign so long over a nation in such continual happiness, pouring forth such sweet blessings upon her people, as your majesty hath done upon us all: and altogether at divine disposition, as your highness' self teacheth us to know. .

And sith it is his mighty pleasure to make your sacred majesty a phenix, a peerless prince, a loadstar, and mirror of the world, to shew forth the shining brightness of his divine grace; why should we not then expect of your highness the accomplishment of rare height, and excellent actions of singular consequence every day, more and more?

It pleased God to grant to those former famous princes, even in their times, some tests of true religion, and of the errors, abuses, and ambition of the clergy; but he reserved the holy work of reformation (well begun by the noble kings, your majesty's most famous father and blessed brother) to be fully consummated by your mighty person. So did he oftsoons give them great entrances into the relieving of their politic governments; and yet hath reserved that heavenly happiness to be thoroughly perfected by your highness. If I should make particular mention, how far those good princes proceeded therein, recounting from king Stephen hitherward, it would be too tedious for your majesty, and eke superfluous, sith your majesty knoweth all better than I. But let it please your high excellency to be only thus far informed, that I never meant to move the same to make choice of three bishops for their sincerity, to become controullers of all your officers, as well of justice as of account; trying, punishing, and expelling: as that valiant, learned, liberal, and charitable prince, king Henry II. did. Nor yet to shift some sheriffs, to put surveyors over the rest; to set their sheriffalties on sale to who will give most; to let them to farm to fat bishops; to search out by general commission, how your fines, forfeitures, amercements, penalties, recognisances, have answered, with that excellent prince, king Richard the First, Cœur de Lion.

Whose highness proceeded further in those affairs: and yet no memory of any vice, saving of some hard dealings towards the king his father, in his frail and young years, which made the same the more excusable. Neither to follow the tragical course of king Henry III. induced by the overbold and eloquent bishop of Winchester by Pat. de Rivalls, his nephew, or bastard son, Segrove and Paslew; who being suddenly exalted to high estate of government; and sometime indiscreetly punishing innocents with offenders, in the highest degree of extremity; yea, expelling all high counsellors almost, and great officers English, (because some were found defective,) and placing others [over] the king's subjects, strangers born; furnishing also his highness' forces with strangers, (a thing which the English ever have naturally hated,) that so far exceeded the bounds both of justice, moderation, and civil policy, as their honest endeavours, which were both honourable and profitable for the good prince in the beginning, by want of moderate, ordinary, sincere, and politic proceedings, became clear contrary in the end. -

As to the godly and right princely endeavours of that virtuous, valiant, and wise king Edward the First, in sifting, shifting, fining, punishing, and expelling all officers and offenders, great and small universally, as well by virtue of his gracious commission, termed *Trayte de Baston*, and as by others; when he found none free from corruption in the whole commonwealth, but only John de Mettingham, and Elias de Beckingham: the kingly example of that paragon among all princes of the time, king Edward III. in changing, committing, fining, and punishing of the greatest lords and officers, both of justice and account, and in placing of others; for that they supplied not his treasure, for the furtherance of his French wars, in the 14th year of his royal reign: the perilous precedent of king Richard II. in letting his whole realm to farm to the lord Scrope, his lord treasurer, to sir John Bushie, his secretary, sir Bagot and sir Grene: the excellent dealings of the duke of York,

ANNO
1535.

ANNO

1595.

protector to the peaceable prince, king Henry VI. together with the earls of Salisbury and Warwick, when the said merciful king reigned in name and dignity only; and they ruled all in rule and authority, till the witty, stout, and yet inconstant queen, by changing of that short regiment, and great alteration both of high and low estate, (which yet for the time relieved many oppressions, and made justice to flourish,) procured both the king's, her own, and the young princes, their sons, all their reigns, even as God himself appointed it. And lastly, as to the prudent proceedings of that sapient king, your majesty's noble grandfather, king Henry VII. whose royal heart was a storehouse of all heroical virtues . . . in instituting masters of forfeitures, and in augmenting of the treasure greatly, through sifting of all sorts of people by such means as are known to your highness.

I induce them, not for any direction to your majesty's high prudence herein, but this I no less humbly than faithfully and fervently beseech of God and your majesty, that it may please your sacred mind to be thereby occasioned to enter into your accustomed most princely, prudent, and grave deliberation now of these lower and lesser matters. And thereupon to make choice of some competent number of singular and sincere subjects, learned and well experienced in the affairs of your public government, and who yet never had their hearts touched, or at least possessed with avaricious appetite, ambition, or other notable crime. So as it may please your highness to authorize and term them to be your majesty's commissioners for a godly reformation of abuses, in politic proceedings; to proceed therein indeed, as well by direction and ordinary course of your laws, as also by virtue of your majesty's supreme regiment and absolute power, from whence law proceeded: and yet in both, and all mild, innocent, moderate, and sincere means. And then shall your most excellent majesty not only fully complete this whole work, and yet further fulfil your blessed function, whereunto the everlasting wisdom of

God hath (among all other princes living) especially appointed you, to his own eternal glory, and to your majesty's immortal memory; but also the same will more augment your highness' treasure, with the ancient revenue of your imperial crown in a short time, than ever came in account 237 into the court of Augmentations, erected in the king your famous father's reign.

ANNO
1595.

How the time fitteth now for it, in respect of your highness' higher affairs of supreme estate, I know not. Neither is it meet for me to aspire thereunto, otherwise than by my dutiful prayers still for blessed continuance of happy success. But this I know for certain, that if our most mighty king of all times do now vouchsafe the time for your majesty to do it, he surely will make all times, all occasions, all powers, all policies, all counsels and devices, whatsoever they be, to yield and apply thereunto: so much, most benign, gracious sovereign, in a generality. Some particularities, for example, will hereafter follow, as may best stand with your majesty's mighty pleasure, and be least to your grace's trouble.

Number CLXV.

Queen Elizabeth falls sick, being in her climacteric. The great apprehensions and fears arising hereupon; but recovereth. Related in a letter of Camden to sir Robert Cotton. Camden's Letters.

THAT they were all in melancholy and pensive cogitations, the queen being indisposed by an *ἀνομία*, [i. e. want of sleep,] and that joined with an inflammation in her breast upwards; and her mind altogether averse from physic. And this happening in her climacterical year, did more than terrify them all; and moved the lords of the council, when they had providently caused all the vagrants thereabouts to be taken up, and shipped for the Low Countries, to draw some munition to the court, and the great horses from Reading, to guard the receipt at Westminster, to take

ANNO
1595.

order for the navy to lie in the narrow seas, and to commit some gentlemen hunger-starved for innovations, as sir Edmond Bainham, Catesby, Tresham, the two Wrights, and afterwards the count Arundel of Warder, to a gentleman's house, for speeches used by the foresaid turbulent spirits. But the queen's dangerous distemper ceased.

And Camden concluded his letter: That he thought good in this generality to impart unto him, that he, as they did, might put away fear, and thank God for this joyful recovery of her, upon whose health and safety they all depended.

238

Number CLXVI.

Edmond Nevyl, [calling himself lord Latymer,] a prisoner in the Tower: his letter to N. Ramberd, steward of the Tower, containing information against the lieutenant of the Tower. November 9, 1595. MSS. Burghlian.

Sir,

I WOULD not be made the author of the things, but if I be called and examined upon these points, I will discharge my conscience: 1. If God shall call her majesty, he [the lieutenant] will not obey the council in general, nor any one in particular. 2. He doubteth not, but to make whom he list to prevail, [that is, to be king;] because of the munition, &c. means which he hath, by taking his place, to arm many thousands: for he holdeth all within the Tower at his commandment, and himself tied to none. He hath demanded many times of divers persons, how many men were sufficient to man the Tower, and what course were best to take to furnish it with, in victuals, as myself, captain Wainman, and Mr. Wentworth.

Wherefore let your articles be drawn, to examine as [us] upon these points: which will be verified and proved. Let me speak with you before you go: for I would not have my hand seen in anywise, because we will reduce these things into a better method: and something else I have to say

unto you, that I will not commit to writing. From the Tower, the 9th of November, 1595. ANNO
1595.

To his approved good friend,
Mr. Ramberd, steward of
the Tower of London.

Your ever assured,
Edmond Latymer.

Number CLXVII.

Another letter of Latymer's to Mr. Ramberd; setting down the articles of information against the lieutenant of the Tower.

IMPRIMIS, That if it shall please God to call her majesty, he will keep the Tower, and will not obey the council in general, nor any one of them in particular. 2. He will make king whom he list, by taking of the Tower, by reason he hath all the chief munition of the realm within his government, and at his commandment. 3. To this effect he hath sought to learn of divers their opinions, and how many men will furnish the Tower; and what discipline were best to be used therein. 4. Also, he hath demanded what course were best to be taken for to victual the same place, if he should be distressed before he could make known his intent to his friends. 5. He affirmeth, that he shall be able to arm four or five hundred men with all manner of munition and furniture, which he supposeth sufficient to sway the diadem which way it pleaseth him. 239

Yours ever,
Edm. Latymer.

In the margin of these articles it is thus writ:

Urge you these articles as of yourself. That whosoever of the lords it be, whom it shall please them to grant their commission to call before them captain Wainman, Mr. Wentworth, and myself, to be examined upon our oaths. And for the other matter of the prisoners, they may be dealt in either at that time, or when it shall seem best unto their honours. But deal you faithfully and secretly herein,

ANNO as you love the credit of your friend, and tender the credit
 1595. of the state.

Number CLXVIII.

Another letter of Nevyl to Ramberd. Nov. 13.

Sir,

FOR divers considerations it is more fit that I speak upon my oath, than set down again things voluntarily: in which examination of time and place, with all other circumstances, will sufficiently appear my care of the imperial state of this honourable island hath been long known unto you, and made well known by you unto that honourable gentleman, Mr. Vice-chamberlain; in whose time this matter was not come to its ripeness that now it is: which may be the cause he never acquainted her majesty therewith. As you are a faithful witness of my dutiful care, so let me entreat you to be a careful friend for the preservation of my credit. Let me be called, deposed, and examined, and then am I bound to say what shall be demanded of me; at least my knowledge therein, &c.

Number CLXIX.

A fourth letter of Nevyl: concerning the words spoken by the lieutenant of the Tower.

Sir,

TO all these articles I am able to depose, and do assure myself, so can Mr. Wentworth, or to the most of them, if he can be drawn to it. But to the third and fourth, captain Wainman both can and will be witness; as also myself: for he hath spoke severally unto us thereof. His speech to me
 240 touching the earl of Hertford was, that Mr. Wentworth's standing for to have a successor established, was only in the favour of his lordship's children: whereof when I spoke to Mr. Wentworth, he answered, he doth me wrong. For he

1000000

himself is of that faction, which he hath plainly discovered unto me, saith he, and shewed me reasons to strengthen his opinion for his speech to Mrs. Wentworth, that if the gentlemen of England were honest, there would be 500 in prison. For her husband's opinion ere it were long, both Mr. Wentworth and his wife do affirm and have done, before captain Weimman and myself. The rest I refer to the time of his examination. The times were most often, and the places in every walking place, about the hours wherein we [prisoners] used to converse. God bless you once more, and ever. This 13th of November, 1595. From the Tower.

Yours ever, as you know,

Edmond Latymer.

This Latymer, (as he styled himself from the earls of Westmerland,) or Neryl, was concerned in the plot with Parry, ann. 1585, for killing of the queen.

This Wentworth was a member of parliament, and committed to the Tower for his too free speaking there, and much for the succession of the family of the Grays to the crown.

1795561

Number CLXX.

Lord Cobham and lord Buckhurst, of the privy-council, to Mr. Wade, clerk of the council: to examine Neryl, whether he gave not occasion to the lieutenant to speak those words as above. To this question Neryl wrote thus to Wade.

Sir,

WHEREAS I understand that you do desire to be better informed in my answer to the last question you propounded unto me, which was, whether I had not given the occasion of the speeches which had passed between the lieutenant and me: whereunto I protest, that I have delivered that thereunto you, which is, that I only commended unto him the honour and credit of his place, as a matter of

ANNO
1595.

great trust and credit; and therewithal shewed unto him, how many earls and some dukes had been constables there. Whereupon he entered into the matters already mentioned simply and of his own accord, without any manner of urging by me: though not all at one time, yet after he had once broken with me therein, he never met with me alone, but ere I went from him; he would be in that matter, &c.

241

Number CLXXI.

*N. Ramberd, steward of the Tower, to the lord chamberlain.
His confirmation of the articles, Nov. 19.*

.... THERE are very strong presumptions to strengthen the said article, viz. "If the gentlemen of England were honest, there would be 500 more in prison for Mr. Wentworth his opinion ere it were long. Thus much should Mr. Wentworth and his wife affirm, in the hearing of Mr. Nevyl and captain Wainman." And shewing his [the lieutenant's] very bad mind: which if your lordship please to command me, I shall be ready to perform, and with all duty to set down.

Number CLXXII.

Dr. James, dean of Christ's-church, Oxon, to the lord keeper Puckring; concerning a stint of bread to be used in that college.

Ihesus.

MY duty in most humble wise remembered: I was bold to acquaint your honour with a purpose that our company had for a stint of bread, which we have now put in execution, as by our common letters to your lordship, with the order enclosed, may appear. I trust nothing shall be found unreasonable or unmeet for men of our places to have been done. I send your honour here enclosed the copies of such letters as the lord chancellors have in former times written to our company, as they remain registered in our books.

Wherein although we have no statute for it, yet your lordship may perceive in what place they accounted themselves. ANNO
1595.

For my own matters, [about a remove to a bishopric,] I hear nothing more than I did at my late being with your lordship. I presume they shall succeed much the better by your lordship's honour's favour and furtherance. . . . And thus beseeching God to bless and preserve your honour, I most humbly take my leave. From Christ's Church, Oxford, the 11th of April, 1595.

Your honour's most humbly at commandment,
W. James.

242

Number CLXXIII.

The dean and prebendaries of Christ's Church, Oxon, to the lord keeper Puckring; sending the copies of letters written in times past by the lord chancellor to that college, for reducing a stint of bread.

Our duties most humble to your lordship remembered.

WHEREAS our house hath been, with the great charge which of late years we have sustained, as by suit in law, reparations of our sundry houses, church and chancels, where we are proprietors, and to the present and former dearths of corn, and great waste and spoil of bread, as also by detaining of rents in divers places to great sums, for the which we are forced to sue, and sundry other occasions, brought behindband, as to your lordship hath been heretofore signified: for the amendment whereof, after many consultations, we find no better or more speedy remedy to grow to a reasonable stint of bread; yielding to every one that be of the king's majesty's foundation but 12*d.* yearly, for all allowances 13*d.* in bread only: and so to all others in like proportion. And to bring them to the old usual rate of being four in a mess, their commons being in a manner doubled over that it was.

Forasmuch as it may be, that upon the execution hereof some resistance may be made here at home, and some com-

ANNO
1595.

plaint exhibited above, (which yet we hope will not be done,) seeing we offer nothing but that which is most reasonable and conscionable, as we doubt not shall to your lordship by the enclosed appear; wherein we yield them all the benefits of our improvements, by rent-corn, the rent of our pastures at Bynsey, reared to a great rate, the recovery whereof, to their only good, hath cost us a thousand pounds, and the benefit of feeding upon our several grounds, of most whereof neither we, they, nor our predecessors ever tasted; wherein we have good interest, and some of us, above our abilities, or the example of others of our place, suffer loss: our most humble suit to your lordship is, that if any disordered persons in our company complain, or by faction draw others better affected, (if such troublesome spirits provoked them not,) that they may be sent home to their studies, and charged to yield obedience, until such time as the next term, or when it shall seem convenient, such grievances as either they now have, or then shall present, may be truly considered of.

We are bound to acquaint your honour with our proceedings herein, for that both we and they have found your honourable favour and assistance in the causes of our house. For the which we all rest most bounden to your honour; and that in the like causes both we and they have had recourse to such as have sitten in the place wherein God now hath placed your lordship, and wherein we beseech him long to bless your honour.

- 243 We trust our cares and travails taken in our house's behalf, now for many years, not unknown to your honour, shall clear us from any wilful conceit either toward the house in general, or any member thereof: and thus we most humbly take our leaves.....From Christ's Church, Oxford, the 11th of April, 1595.

Your lordship's most humble at commandment,

W. James,	Tho. Thornton,
Joh. Purfey,	Ro. Pickaret,
Arthur Wake,	Joh. Weston,
Ric. Eeds,	Tho. White.

Number CLXXIV.

ANNO
1555.

Then follows an original paper, endorsed, Christ's Church endowments and expositions: declaring the state of that college. Sent to the lord keeper.

KING HENRY VIII. of famous memory, founded Christ's Church, Oxon, and endowed it with (as appeareth by our letters patent)	-	-	-	-	2200	0	0
King Edward VI. gave to supply some wants					21	9	3
Queen Mary for more, to supply the said church					74	8	4

<i>Total. terrarum et possessionum</i>	-	2295	17	7
--	---	------	----	---

Then follow charges going out of the said revenue.

Imprimis, The stipends yearly paid to the dean, prebends, 3 professors, of Divinity, Hebrew, and Greek; 100 students; 12 chaplains, and singing-men; 8 chorists; 24 servants and officers; 24 alms-men, paid ever since the foundation,

-	-	-	-	-	-	1057	3	4
---	---	---	---	---	---	------	---	---

Then are set down reasons for the stint of bread.

The stint of bread is grounded on equity and necessity.

I. *Equity* appeareth. The far greater part of the house having but 14*d.* or 12*d.* for all charges of diet, have every one of them by this rate of 9 ounces in bread, 11*d.* 3 farthings, besides commons and drink. 2. The other colleges that have stint, have it only of 8 ounces: and such as have no stint, if they spend above the first allowance, pay for it. 3. It is sufficient for a student, and by them so confessed: and the better sort spend nothing so much. 4. It preserveth them that are sworn (to be true and kind to the house, and in nothing to hurt it) from wilful perjury. 5. It is general, from the sub-dean and canons, to the lowest and meanest servants.

II. *Necessity* appeareth. 1. The church cannot bear it, as is shewed. 2. It hindereth spoil and waste; upon every offence by them conceived, and upon every punishment by the officers inflicted, as shall be proved. 3. It stayeth purloining and carrying bread out of the hall, at after dinner

ANNO 1595. and supper, to a fire, and for breakfasts, as shall be proved.

4. It riddeth the house of almost an hundred thriftless hangbyes, whom they maintain with bread. 5. It shall keep our butlers and officers from spoil and waste, and enforce them to answer for every farthing.

The students' commons is little, and not sufficient.

For answer whereof, 1. They have the king's allowance, without bar or abatement: and the king left six or seven acres to feed beasts. 2. The dean and chapter have in former times purchased, and to their use converted the pastures of Chaundense, &c. 3. The now dean and chapter, at their great cost and suit, as is known to the lord archbishop of Canterbury and lord treasurer, recovered a third part of the copyholds, tithes, and pastures of Bynsic, to the yearly value of 40*l.* or thereabouts; saving some annuities, going out for some years, yet to come, as appeareth in the award; all the remnant remaining to their benefit. 4. The now dean and chapter, in whose time provision of corn did first come, have given unto them all the improvements of rent-corn by statute, wherein of right they have a portion: and so concluded it *capitulariter*, until their commons shall be doubled throughout the year at dinner and supper: which, with the rent and provision of corn of this last year's, did amount to 113*l.* 14*s.* 8*d.* And the now dean, for their benefit, hath any time this seven year lent them 100*l.* and forborne his own stipend till the year's end; which was quarterly payable, as they are paid theirs.

Number CLXXV.

Robert earl of Essex to lord keeper Puckring, July 1595; for his retainers, put away because he would not offend the law. And that for the cause of retainers they may not be put out of the commission of the peace.

My very good lord,

ALTHOUGH I am very loath to leave the name of master to so many honest gentlemen in Wales, as out of

their love desire to serve and follow me, and do hold the place of justices in those parts; yet I had rather give them liberty, and free them from retaining unto me, than that in this respect they should lose any jot of that former reputation: which I do with due regard unto her majesty's service, and the good of the several counties where they dwell; being all of them, to my knowledge, very able and sufficient gentlemen. It shall therefore suffice henceforth, that I have their love without further ceremonies. Praying your lordship that they may not, by the late order, be subject to the loss of their places for this cause, but to deal honourably and favourably with them for my sake, &c. July 1595.

Endorsed, *Lord Essex for his retainers, put away be- 245*
cause he will not offend the law, and for that cause they
may not be put out of commission.

Number CLXXVI.

The earl of Essex to the lord keeper Puckring: in behalf
of Buckridge, his chaplain. Jan. 12, 1595.

.....I SENT Mr. Smith, the clerk of the council, not long since, unto your lordship, to entreat your honourable favour towards my chaplain, Mr. Buckridge, for the benefice of Bradfield. And by him received such answer, as gave me hope of good success.....I pray you make me beholden to you for your honourable favour towards my chaplain, which I will acknowledge with all thankfulness.Thus I commit your good lordship to God's best protection. From the court, the 12th of Jan. 1595.

Number CLXXVII.

The earl to the lord keeper: for Dr. Meyric, his chaplain.
Feb. 1595.

.....I HAVE a special care of the good and preferment

ANNO
1595.

of my chaplain, Dr. Meyrick, as well for the worthiness that is in him, as also in regard of his long dependence on my father and myself. This made me lately recommend him to your lordship's good favour and remembrance, as opportunity should be offered. Which request I do now again renew with earnest affection: leaving which, I do desire for him to the solicitation of the bearer, his kinsman, &c. Feb. 5th.

Number CLXXVIII.

In the behalf of both the above-mentioned clergymen, his chaplains, the earl had writ to the lord keeper the year before, viz. Jan. 29, 1594, with mention of their deserts.

His letter for Dr. Meyrick.

UPON the preferment of Dr. Morgan to the bishopric of Landaff, the parsonage of Llanrullin, in the county of Montgomery, which he now holdeth, will be in your lordship's disposition. Whereunto I do greatly desire, with
246 your good favour, that my chaplain, Dr. Meyrick, may be preferred. He is a man worthy of it, and one whose good I do the more tender, for that he belonged heretofore unto my father, and hath only an archdeaconry, whereupon he liveth. This parsonage is in the country where he was born; and having the language is the fitter for it, and may the better profit the people there. If it shall please your lordship for my sake to bestow the same upon him, or, if it be already granted, the rectory of Denbigh, which the said Dr. Morgan also holdeth. Wherein your lordship shall do me a great favour, &c. From the court, the 29th of Jan. 1594.

Your lordship's very assured friend,

Essex.

Number CLXXIX.

ANNO
1595.*His letter for Mr. Buckridge. Feb. 17, 1594.*

YOUR lordship hath been already moved, as I understand, by some friends of my chaplain, Mr. Buckridge, for a small living in Hertfordshire, called Shephale; and what hope he hath already of your lordship's favour in it, I do not know. But if your lordship hath, at any other friend's suit, been pleased to bestow it on him, these may be to give you thanks. If not, and that it remaineth in your lordship's power, they come in good time to entreat your lordship for him, as for a man worthy in himself of good preferment; and besides as my chaplain; by which name, I doubt not but he shall find the more favour at your lordship's hands. I pray your lordship make me beholden to you for this benefit to him. And command me, when I can do good to any of yours. From Greenwich, the 17th of February, 94.

This vicarage of Shephale was given before.

This Buckridge, or one of his name, was muster of St. John's college in Oxford; and made bishop of Rochester and Ely successively.

Number CLXXX.

Sir John Puckring, lord keeper, his petition to the queen, for a lease of part of the possessions of the bishopric of Ely: a motion to fill that vacant see. MSS. D. Puckring. About the year 1595.

THAT it may please your most excellent majesty to grant me, your most bounden servant, your princely favour, that I may have a lease of part of the possessions of the bishopric of Ely, not exceeding a third part thereof in 247 value, for such a reasonable term of years as the bishop may grant unto your majesty; yielding unto the bishop and his successors the best accustomed rents now, or any

ANNO
1595.

time heretofore, answered to the bishop for the same, and performing, as usual, covenant for payment of rent, and doing reparations.

For the accomplishment whereof, it may please your majesty to translate one of the eldest bishops; who may make the same lease. By whose great age it is like the same bishopric will not tarry long forth of your majesty's hands. I find no other suit so fit for your majesty to grant me as this; for the exchanges, fee-farms, and leases of your majesty's own lands are to be taken from your own self, and from your royal revenues.....It may perchance be objected, that your majesty having now the revenue of the bishopric, doth forego the same by making a bishop. Answer, Your majesty, by giving the bishopric, shall have the first-fruits, which is one year's profit, and the tenths and subsidies besides: which you cannot have, while the bishopric remains in your majesty's hands: which, together, I take it, will be as profitable to your majesty, as it is now the bishopric remaineth in your hands. And your majesty shall hereby have moreover the first-fruits of that bishopric from whence your majesty shall be pleased to translate the bishop to Ely; and also of so many as you shall be pleased by that occasion to remove or translate.

The clergymen may perchance think your majesty doth decrease the revenues of the church by making a lease of the bishops' lands. Answer, So long as the inheritance and the ordinary rent of the bishopric is not diminished, they cannot think any thing thereof, but rather may be glad, that after so long vacancy your majesty will be pleased to make a bishop. Because there will be one see the more filled than hath been many years heretofore: and where, for want of a bishop, a great number of papists are harboured in that diocese, and the bishop's houses much decayed. Your majesty, by making a bishop, may easily remedy those inconveniences. And moreover, if your majesty make a bishop of Ely, he is to do your highness divers services; as finding of men and horses in time of war, &c.

Number CLXXXI.

ANNO
1595.

Another discourse of the said lord on the same subject; viz. that the placing of a bishop in the see of Ely will be as profitable to her majesty as now the vacancy thereof is: besides divers reasons for the which, also it appeareth to be very expedient.

THE clear profits of the bishopric of Ely, as it hath been answered to her majesty, since the see became last void, (as will appear by the accounts remaining with Mr. Auditor Neal,) hath been, *communibus annis*, about 1500 0 0

Her majesty, by placing a bishop there, shall yearly have 248 for the tenths thereof - - - 213 9 10 q.

For the subsidy yearly - - - 383 6 8

For the first-fruits, the tenths being deducted, each year, by the space of

two years - - - - - 960 13 2 ob. q.

In all years to be answered to her majesty - - - - - 1557 10 8 ob. q.

Moreover, the bishop of Norwich, who is eighty-eight years old, being translated to the bishopric of Ely, which is of lesser charge and jurisdiction, there will come to her majesty, for the first-fruits of the bishopric of Norwich, at the least - - - - - 800 0 0

And so it appeareth that her majesty shall make profit, and not any loss, by the placing of a bishop in the see of Ely.

By occasion also of this translation, divers other removes may become very profitable to her majesty: viz. The first-fruits of the bishop of Hereford, by that bishop's remove to Norwich, 700*l*. The first-fruits of the bishop of Chichester, by his remove to Hereford, 600*l*. The first-fruits of the bishop of Chester, by his remove to Chichester, 360*l*. And the like out of the bishop of Peterborough, by his remove to Chester, 300*l*. - - - - - 2010 0 0

Furthermore, the bishopric of Ely, being bestowed upon so old a man as the bishop of Norwich, is very likely shortly to be again at her majesty's disposing.

ANNO
1595.

Number CLXXXII.

Another paper of the said lord keeper: soliciting the queen for a lease of some part of the revenues of the abovesaid bishopric.

HE seeketh but to be the bishop's fermour; and that only of such portion as the bishop can and will be willing to spare: being no part of his mansion-house, or demesns; but that which others shall have, if the lord keeper have it not. And the lord keeper having it, will let to the tenants for reasonable fines: who will be glad of good and certain terms, and will bestow costs upon the same.

The reasons. By making a bishop of Ely, your majesty shall fill that see, which hath been fourteen years void, [that is, from year 1581,] and remove that opinion of keeping a bishopric so long in your majesty's hands.

A lease may be made from the bishop to your majesty (and so to be given to myself) of 600*l.* by year, of those possessions, for such reasonable years as the bishop may grant, without diminishing any usual rent of the same.

249

Number CLXXXIII.

Sir Edward Wotton to the lord treasurer; suing to be treasurer of the queen's chamber, upon the death of sir Francis Knowles.

Most honourable,

I AM so clear from having given your lordship any cause of offence, that I pretend to have deserved your favour. In confidence whereof I write this: beseeching your lordship to be my mean to her majesty for the treasurership of her chamber. Your lordship shall prefer unto her a faithful servant, and one most thankful unto yourself: which point I forbear to amplify; knowing the little credit much saying carrieth in this age of words. It may please your lordship to hope well of my actions, which are the true interpreters of the mind. And so, expecting your honour-

able answer, I wish your lordship a speedy recovery, with continuance in health and happiness. From Pykering-house, ANNO
1585.
this present Friday.

Your lordship's, to do you honour,
Edward Wotton.

But succeeded not; Roger lord North obtaining the place.

Number CLXXXIV.

Sir Robert Cecil, knt. made secretary of state: son to the lord treasurer, lord Burghley. His familiar letter to Mr. Michael Hicks, his friend, secretary to the said lord: avowing his principle, chiefly to serve the queen.

Mr. Hicks,

THINGS past are known unto you: and the more that difficulties were, the more contentment now to remember them, being overcome. That which is to come, I pray you take care of: which is, especially, that I may not be known to have had any particular dealing in the matter more than others, of the conceit I had, that his worth justly entitled him to this fortune, [perhaps the marrying of a rich ward.] For it will disable me to do him or others pleasure hereafter, by my access to her majesty's ear: which now I so used, as her majesty cannot suspect that I look to any thing but her service: which, as I profess and protest, I did and do most of any thing in all my recommendations: so do I not deny to myself the liberty, that, when other things concur, my friends are now nearest to me in my wishes and honest endeavours.....

Your friend,
Ro. Cecil.

ANNO
1595.

Number CLXXXV.

250

A book came forth this year, 1595, (printed at Lond. 4to.) called, The State of the English Fugitives under the King of Spain and his Ministers: containing besides, a discourse of the said king's manner of government, and the injustice of many late dishonourable practices by him committed.

THE intent of the book is, to dissuade the English Roman catholics to forsake their own country to go into Flanders, or other countries under the king of Spain, to serve him. And that because so many such gentlemen that were there met with such great scorn, injury, and destruction: the author himself having been five or six years since in those parts of Flanders, and seeing (as he writeth in his preface) a miserable troop of his unhappy countrymen (some of which were gentlemen of good houses in England) wandering, in poor looks and afflicted gestures, heavily groaning under the burden of an extreme and calamitous necessity; being debarred from return into their own country, and daily overlooked with the proud eyes of disdainful Spaniards.....

Knowing of some of his good friends and acquaintance in England, possessed with the like humour as that which possessed the aforesaid unhappy gentlemen, to forsake their country, and to settle themselves in the service and dominion of the king of Spain, he thought good to advertise them of that which his experience had gathered, touching the small regard, distress, poverty, scorn, calamities, and affliction, that befell to such as had already entered that course.

The ground of this discourse was a letter that he had formerly sent, who himself then served the king of Spain, to a catholic gentleman, his kinsman and friend, that had signified to him of his longing to come into those parts, and to employ himself there in the service of the Spanish king, as many other young gentlemen did; in hope there to grow to great preferment, advancement, and employment,

and wealth: and others pretending matter of conscience, thinking assuredly to live there with more liberty and ease of mind, than within their own country they enjoyed. Therefore in the same letter he resolved (out of due and humble regard to the service and sacred person of the queen, and to his dearly beloved native country and countrymen) to set down some notes and observations, which by a long and dangerous experience in this place he had heedfully gathered; by which he hoped to make it manifest to him, and to all others his countrymen, by apparent examples and undeniable truths, how greatly they that greatly desired to repair thither in a hope of good, to be received by the said king or his ministers, did err and were deceived.

ANNO
1595.

In the conclusion of his book, because many of our coun- 251
trymen, living in great happiness at home, yet (like those that cannot take good rest when they lie soft) do in their conceit mislike the quiet estate they live in, he shewed..... touching the benefits and blessings God had poured down upon her majesty and her people, together with the flourishing state of the realm, since the time of her majesty's government, so plentiful in peace, victorious in war, so industrious in arts, so excelling in all sciences, that the very Spanish enemy himself did not stick many times to break out into an admiration thereat; and sometimes in his scoffing, or rather blasphemous humour, to swear, that he thought Jesus Christ a protestant. And then the writer made a brief comparison between this government and that of the adversary, viz. the king of Spain: his cruel and inhuman usage of his miserable subjects; his violent abolition, and taking away all their privileges; and, in fine, the unspeakable bondage, constrained servitude, and pitiful desolation in which they lived.

In this discourse he mentioned eight English gentlemen hanged up, after the sack of Antwerp, by his captain-general in the Low Countries, notwithstanding notable services they had done both to him and the duke of Alva: and Eggrimond Ratelyff and Mr. Grey, gentlemen of noble

ANNO
1595.

houses, and faithfully affected both in religion and service to the Spanish king. Nevertheless, upon some groundless suspicion, that they should have practised the death of don John, were both apprehended; and nothing could be proved against them: yet their heads were stricken off in the market-place of Namur, protesting their innocency at that time. Four and twenty English soldiers were hanged together in the market-place of Audenard, by the Spanish provost. Of the surrender of which place, the troops, wherein they were, were the chief causes. He mentioned also the miserable deaths, or miserable lives of Norris, Barny, Cornish, Gibson, Pigot, Tresham, captains, with abundance more; and of some hundreds of brave, tall English soldiers, that never received, in all the time of their service, any one month's pay. And added, that he had seen lieutenants and ensigns of them go up and down sickly and famished, begging their bread, covered only with poor blankets, and ticks of featherbeds, that they had rifled in the villages abroad. And he himself relieved some of them.

252

Number CLXXXVI.

The visitation of Richard Fletcher, bishop of London, Oct. 20, ann. regin. 37. In some articles of inquiry, chiefly respecting the clergy. MSS. D. Joh. episc. Ely.

Art. 10. WHETHER your preacher, in his prayer made in the entrance of his prayer to his sermon, do use at all times to pray for her majesty by her whole title, by the queen's injunctions, given unto her as queen of England, France, and Ireland, defender of the faith, &c. over all causes, and over all persons, within her majesty's dominions, as well ecclesiastical as temporal, next and immediately under God supreme head, &c.

Art. 11. Whether any teacher in conventicles or private meeting have read or used within your parishes, either in the church, or privately in any house, by any not sufficiently licensed thereunto? Or whether any such reader do

teach any doctrine of innovation, to withdraw the people from due obedience unto the ordinary of the church, set forth by public authority, or cause them to forbear the participating either in the prayers or sacraments with our church? ANNO
1595.

Art. 18. Whether any such do commend a discipline contrary to the laws now established, privately or publicly?

Art. 27. Whether, &c. do declare or speak any thing in derogation of the Book of Common Prayer, &c.

Art. 28. Whether any preacheth, and doth not at certain times in the year minister the sacraments in his own person, and in such church wherein he readeth his lectures?

Art. 31. Whether there be contention for doctrine and ceremony; what, and who was the cause thereof?

Number CLXXXVII.

The archbishop of Canterbury to Chuderton, bishop of Lincoln; removed thither from Westchester, 1595. Touching relief of the poor in the time of dearth.

Salutem in Christo.

YOUR lordship shall do well, in this time of scarcity and dearth of corn and victuals, to admonish the preachers within your diocese, to exhort the wealthier sort of their parishioners to contribute more liberally towards the relief of the poor; and specially in such sort as by letters is signified from the lords and others of her majesty's most honourable privy-council, to the sheriffs and others in every several county. And I could wish that such as are noted to hold up their corn in this time of extremity were specially admonished thereof, and let to understand, how great an offence that is in the sight of Almighty God, &c. 253

I doubt not but that your lordship will take due care hereof, the necessity of the time requiring the same. And so, with my hearty commendations, I commit your lordship

ANNO to the tuition of Almighty God. From Croyden, the 27th
 1595. of May, 1595.

Your lordship's loving brother in Christ,
 Jo. Cantuar.

Number CLXXXVIII.

*Matthew Hutton, archbishop of York, to the lord treasurer,
 in behalf of the lady Margaret Nevil, reclaimed from
 popery.*

My honourable and very good lord,

YESTERDAY in the afternoon I was at your lordship's lodging in court, to have seen and certified your honour, (but that you were then sitting in council,) that I had been with her most excellent majesty, making petition for the poor distressed lady, Margaret Nevyl, shewing her pitiful estate; that she is wholly reformed in religion, most penitent for her offence, and most humbly with tears beseecheth her highness' most gracious pardon for her life, with somewhat for her living. It pleased her highness to vouchsafe me a gracious speech; saying, she would have consideration of the petition.

Now I am very heartily to recommend her lamentable case unto your honourable and favourable consideration, that your lordship would vouchsafe to be a special good means for this poor condemned madam; whom many godly men do greatly pity, and I have been willing to my power to help. Your good lordship, in my opinion, may do a godly deed, and make many of her honourable and good friends bound unto your lordship in her behalf. And truly, my good lord, as, I thank God, I was a means to do good to her soul, (whose example may happily do good to others,) so I would be right glad it would please her majesty to shew to the world, that she putteth great difference between her, that is dutiful, and her two sisters, that continue obstinate.

Thus, sorry that I have been so troublesome to your lordship in this matter, I commend your honour to the blessed direction of the Almighty. From Chancery, the 10th of April, 1595.

Your good lordship's in Christ most assured,

Matth. Ebor.

Number CLXXXIX.

254

The archbishop of York to the lord treasurer. Against certain concealers, to deprive him of certain church lands in Rippon, upon pretence of concealment.

My honourable and very good lord,

I AM given to understand, that one Ellesworth and Proctor, two troublesome and unworthy informers in the late vacancy of this see, procured commission out of her majesty's honourable court of exchequer; by colour whereof, they have indirectly (so far as they could) endeavoured to have certain lands belonging to my liberties of Rippon, and given to the use of a free chapel, to be proved to be concealed: although it is well known, and may appear by ancient records, that the same are holden by the archbishop of York by copy of court-roll. I am therefore earnestly to pray your good lordship, that my poor tenant there be no further molested or charged by means of the suggestions of such promoting persons, little worthy the countenance of that honourable court. Or, if it please your honour to be further satisfied herein, that direction may be given to some of good credit, that may also certify the state and truth thereof. And so I heartily commend your good lordship to the blessed protection of the Almighty. From Bishopthorp, the 6th of May, 1595.

Your good lordship's most assured,

Matth. Ebor.

ANNO
1595.

Number CXC.

The council in the north to the lords of the privy-council: giving notice of the death of Henry earl of Huntington, president of the council of the north.

Rt. honourable, our very good lords,

MAY it please your lordships to be advertised, that our very good lord, the earl of Huntington, lord president in these parts, departed this life at York, about seven of the clock in the morning of this 14th day of December. The state of his sickness and manner of death, (which was most Christian like,) this bearer, his lordship's servant, can at large declare to your lordships. Immediately upon his death, we, then present, and attendant on his lordship, did collect into places fit for the same, all casks, boxes, writings, letters, and papers which we could find; and locking up the doors of those places, we have sealed up the same with our seals, and delivered the keys to the lord archbishop of York, till your lordships' pleasure be further known.

255 Wherein, as likewise for your lordships' direction in the affairs and government of this place, we most humbly pray your lordships' advertisement and instructions. And so, most humbly recommending our services unto your good lordships, we take our leaves. From York, this 14th day of December, 1595.

Matth. Ebor.

E. Stanhope,
W. Cardynal,

Joh. Gibson,
Jo. Foyne.

Number CXCI.

The archbishop of York to the lord treasurer: desiring a pardon for Nelson, a priest, a prisoner; now reclaimed.

My honourable good lord,

ONE Martin Nelson, a late massing-priest, taken the last summer, wholly reclaimed, and hath before me dutifully and willingly subscribed to the book of Articles of Religion

established; and also very humbly, upon his knees, taken the oath of her majesty's supremacy earnestly. Considering that, as he is most penitent for his offence, so he will faithfully labour as a minister, to do good service to God and her majesty, and to persuade and reform such as heretofore he hath dissuaded and seduced. And he humbly beseecheth, and I humbly pray your lordship, that being aged, and having nothing for his relief in prison, he may be bailed, if it may be; and that it will please your lordship to be an honourable good means, as my late honourable good lord president would have been, to procure him her majesty's gracious pardon: her highness being ever most mercifully inclined, as a princely pattern of piety, to take great pity upon penitent offenders, therein truly imitating Almighty God, whose person she doth rightly represent here on earth.

Thus, beseeching God long to bless your honour with his manifold graces, I commend you to his heavenly protection. From Bishopthorp, the 15th of January, 1595.

Number CXCII.

A memorial: containing the lord treasurer's advice concerning the Spanish preparations. November 4, 1596.

MY opinion by way of advice, under correction, of for- Anno 1596.
mer information concerning the matter moved from her majesty to be considered, what were meet to be done upon the advertisements of the Spanish preparations, is as followeth:

First, For the present, I think the order sent to the 256
realm, to all lieutenants and governors, for the putting in readiness of all their forces, and to put in speedy execution all former orders for the defence of the seacoast, hath been most necessarily expedited. And where they are eftsoons required to certify what they do and mean to do, for speedy execution of these orders, the same would be reiterated, if they shall not speedily advise.

Secondly, I think it most necessary, that a convenient

ANNO
1596.

number of ships of war be speedily sent to the west parts, both for the comfort of the coasts, and to do such service as they shall be able to do, to impeach the enemy from free landing of forces in places where the said ships of war may impeach them. And though speedily they cannot be put in readiness; for lack partly of plenty of victuals, partly because the ships meet for this service cannot be so speedily rigged as were necessary, and partly for lack of mariners, whereof a great number are absent in voyages, such a navy as may be sufficient to encounter the Spanish; yet such a number would be presently made ready, as victual and mariners may be had to serve the purpose. And presently also some bargain would be made with the merchants of Holland, to make provision of some quantity of grain; whereof some part would be brought to London, some part to Dover, and some part to Portsmouth; where there are places of stowage, and all necessary offices to make provision of supplies of victuals for the ships.

Item, Beside that provision, a former charge would be renewed to sir Henry Palmer, to stay all foreign shippings with corn which should pass the narrow seas: seizing so much thereof as may be proved to be intended for Spain: and all the rest to be taken up by way of bargain for the queen's majesty, upon reasonable prices.

Item, I think it very necessary to consider partly how a sufficient army may be compounded of the forces of the countries by perusal of the certificates of every county, of the numbers there in readiness, what arms may serve to withstand and defend the enemy, when he shall land. And because it is uncertain where the enemy shall land, it is requisite that one army might be compounded of the western counties, as of the forces of Cornwall, Devon, Dorset, and Somerset; and one other of the counties more eastwardly, as Wiltshire, Hampshire, Sussex, and Berkshire. And considering the numbers of the countries already levied and sorted into bands are number sufficient to make a complete army, joining three or four or more of the counties together, for the composition of two such armies, which

may be readily made of 20,000 men, or mo or less, it shall be necessary, that her majesty do make choice of some fit noble person to be her lieutenant-general, to take charge of the said armies, whensoever they shall be compounded, and shall be used; who may be ready to have his commission, as soon as cause shall require to have the said armies used, according as the enemy shall be seen to direct his course for landing. And likewise her majesty may do well to name some other persons to be ready also to serve over the said army as high-marshal of the field, and one other to be the general of the horsemen, and one to be lieutenant of the lances, and one other of the light horse; and one to be master of the ordnance for the field, and one to be colonel-general of the infantry, and a sergeant-major: and to have one a provost-marshal and corporal of the field; and other inferior officers, to be named by the advice of the lieutenant-general. All which officers, so named aforehand, may be ready with the lieutenant to repair to the countries, when there shall be cause to have the army assembled. 257

And forasmuch as in all the countries the companies both of horsemen and of footmen have been of long time committed commonly to the government of the best men of worship and knowledge in the countries, who have been at great charges in keeping the said numbers in order, and seeing them to be furnished with armour, weapon, and other necessities, and that the people of the countries, so distributed by bands to the government of the choice men of worship and value, will be most willing to serve and venture their lives with their said captains, I think it most necessary, that the said gentlemen be continued in the charge of their said bands, and not to be discharged without notable cause of default or lack, and not to commit the said people to the charge of strangers, unknown to them, who neither can have that natural care over them, nor have the affections of the people so devoted to them, as thereby to adventure their persons and their lives under them. Nevertheless, considering that when those numbers shall be assembled, and reduced to the body of an army, these particular

ANNO
1596.

captains and leaders shall not be thought able to direct them in general sort, as is requisite in an army; therefore all such captains, with all their bands, shall be subject to the allowance and commandment of the general lieutenant of the army, and to the direction also of the former officers named for an army. For seeing that the inferior officers, as the lieutenants, sergeants, viewed to be inexperienced for their offices, or otherwise, to be removed, and more sufficient put in their places, by order of the lieutenant-general; and to avoid the discontentment of such as have already offices, as colonels of regiments, the said lieutenant-general may do well (except he see great defaults in the said colonels) to suffer them to be particular colonels of the said regiments, and yet to appoint them to be under the rule of the general colonel of the army; to be employed as the lieutenant-general shall order.

Item, 'The like order would be had, where any have had principal charge of leading of lances and light-horsemen, to suffer them to continue their charge; and yet to be directed under the lieutenants of the horsemen for the army.

Item, Because it may be doubted, that the forces of every country may not be in such readiness, nor so furnished with armour and weapon as were necessary, or that the persons levied, and on roll, as soldiers, may be found unable in their persons, it were very necessary, that presently into every maritime county upon the south and west, a fit person of knowledge might be chosen and sent by her majesty into the counties, to the lieutenant of the county, to be by him directed to take the view of the bands, both of horsemen and footmen, in every part of the shire; and to observe the defaults of the persons, armour, and furniture, and in her majesty's name to charge the captains of the band to see the same speedily reformed; and to give knowledge thereof also to the lieutenant of the county, to move him to see the same supplied, as he will answer to her majesty.

Item, I think it reasonable, that wheresoever this army shall be compounded, and wheresoever the lieutenant-general shall come personally to execute the office of general,

that for the time of his residence in any county, he should, by virtue of his commission, authorize the lieutenant of that county to be his lieutenant-general, as long as the army shall remain in that county: so as the authority of the lieutenant of the county be not extinguished, but continue under the rule of the lieutenant-general of the army.

ANNO
1596.

Item, I think it very necessary, that all persons being of the nobility, and being gentlemen, residing within every county, which are not by any former order limited to a particular charge of leading of horsemen or footmen, nor are limited to any martial charge, should be presently enjoined to furnish themselves, to the best of their power, both with horsemen and footmen, to be ready to serve at the commandment of the lieutenant of the army, as parcel of the army, when he shall come into the county: and to be directed by him for any special service requisite. Of which number, I think, there must be very many of every county, that are of the great livelihood, and may have at their commandment, besides their own family, many of their tenants, that are not allotted to any charge of particular bands. And of these persons the lieutenant of the county should be charged to make present inquisition; and by his letters in her majesty's name to command them to put themselves in order with their families, and such of their tenants as are not already sorted into bands, to be ready to serve in the army, as the lieutenant-general shall command. To whom the lieutenant of the county shall give knowledge of the number of such persons, and of their force.

I think it very necessary that letters be written to the lieutenants of every shire, and to the bishops of every diocese within the said shires, to inquire presently, what number of persons, that be householders, and of livings able to keep house, be recusants, and forbear to come to the church, according to the laws of the realm. And to cause all such persons to be apprehended, and removed from their dwelling-places, and to be committed to the prisons of the shires, or except they shall give good assurance in bonds with sureties sufficient, to remove out of the counties where their

ANNO
1596.

dwelling is, to the custody of some other good loyal subject, dwelling in a maritime county, with condition not to depart from thence without special knowledge and licence of the lieutenant of the county where he did inhabit. And that all such horses, armour, and weapons, as such recusants shall have, be delivered to the custody of some public officer, to be employed for the common service of the realm; and the charge of maintenance of the horse to be borne with the goods of the recusant.

I mean not here to include such principal recusants as have been heretofore committed, and been released upon bonds, taken by the archbishop of Canterbury. But that all they be presently committed to his custody; and their horses and armour seized for present service.

- 259 *Item*, If there shall be any woman, being a widow, of value to keep house, that shall be also a recusant, she shall be in like manner committed or bound as a man, being a recusant, shall be. Or any horse or gelding able to serve, either with armour or weapon, or for carriage, the same also shall be seized for the service of the country, and maintained at the charges of the owner.

Item, If it shall be found that there be any single man, able in person to serve, though they be no householders, and that are recusants, the same shall also be apprehended and committed to prison, there to remain during the pleasure of the lieutenant of the shire, as he shall think fit: and their charges to be borne by themselves or parents, or otherwise to be put to labour for their own living without liberty, &c.

Item, If there shall be any person that hath any of their children fled out of the realm as fugitives, that same person shall be bound to good abearing, and not to have any intelligence with their children, or any ways to relieve them.

Item, It shall be necessary that all bishops and clergymen be enjoined to have in readiness as many able men, both horsemen and footmen, as they or any others, whose livings they have, were charged withal in the year 1588. The same to cause to be presented to the lieutenant of the shire, or to his deputy; so as they may be ready to serve

in the army of the forces that shall be compounded of that county. ANNO 1596.

I think it very necessary, that if the enemy shall land, and take footing in any place, with likelihood to continue, order be given that all horses, and other [cattle] besides, and all other things that may serve the enemy for victuals, be driven from those ports, with charge to the owners to see them kept from the possession of the enemy. And that all commodities which the enemy might take by grinding of any corn, either by watermill or windmill, may be impeached: which may be done by removing of the grinding-stones of the mills, and by taking away the cross-sails with [of] the windmills.

Item, For impeaching of the landing, besides the service that her majesty's shipping may most aptly do therein, there would be made ready some fieldpieces, to be drawn with horses, upon the first view of the enemy upon the coast: whereby the enemy's boats might be repulsed from free or speedy landing. For the defence of which ordnance some banks of earth would be raised, to defend them from the shot of the enemy.

All other particular devices to impeach the coming forward of the enemy, besides main force of horse and foot, are to be referred to the knowledge of the general, and the council of war, as by trenching and scouring of the ways, and by crossing all strait passages with felling trees, where the places may serve thereto.

The places also for their fresh waterings would be in the night disturbed; or so guarded, as the same might be kept from the enemy.

Some provision of fireworks would be provided, to burn the ships in the haven.

ANNO
1596.

any nation, but the subjects of the king of Spain, her majesty's enemy; or such as shall manifestly aid the said king, for the intended invasion of the queen's majesty's dominions. Thus endorsed by the lord treasurer's own hand: the whole being of his drawing up.

Thus endorsed on the other side by another hand.

A declaration of the causes moving the queen's majesty to prepare and send a navy to the seas, for defence of her realms against the king of Spain's forces. To be published by the generals of the said navy, to the intent that it shall appear to the world, that her majesty armeth her navy only to defend herself, and to offend her enemies; and not to offend any other that shall forbear to strengthen her enemy; but to use them with all lawful favour. May 1596.

TO all Christian people to whom this declaration shall come to be read or heard, greeting. We, Robert earl of Essex, &c. and Charles lord Howard, lord admiral of England, &c. having the charge of a royal navy, prepared, and sent to the seas, by the most excellent princess, the lady Elizabeth, queen of England, France, and Ireland, &c. do give all men knowledge, that this said navy under our charge is by her majesty prepared and sent to serve on the seas, for defence of her majesty's realm, dominions, and subjects, against such mighty forces as we are advised, from all parts of Christendom, to be already prepared by the king of Spain; and by further provision of men and ships, daily sent for, are to be mightily increased, to invade her majesty's realms, (as heretofore in the year of our Lord 1588 was attempted; even when there was a treaty continued by both their commissioners for a peace, with a greater army than ever before in his time was set to the seas. Though by God's goodness, and the valour and wisdom of her noble and faithful subjects, the same was notably made frustrate.)

And because her majesty hath good intelligence of perfect amity with all kings and princes of Christendom, saving

only with the king of Spain, who hath these many years most unjustly professed openly great inimity by divers actions, both against her royal person, and her countries and people, without any just cause first given on her majesty's part: therefore we, the said earl and lord admiral, do ascertain all persons, that we are most strictly commanded by her excellent majesty to forbear from offending in this our voyage of any manner person of what nation soever, except the said king's natural subjects, or such other born strangers as shall give to the said king manifest aid, with men, ships, artillery, victuals, or other warlike provision, for invasion of her majesty: which her majesty's commandment we mean dutifully to observe. And do therefore give strait charge to all persons that shall serve in this navy underneath us, upon pain of extreme punishment, to observe the same.

Yet to avoid all occasions that may breed question who they are, being not the king of Spain's subjects, that shall be charged by us to be manifest aiders for the furnishing and strengthening of the king's said forces; provided either by land or sea, to attempt any invasion of her majesty's countries, we do, for the liquidation of this doubt, earnestly and in God's name require and charge all persons that are not the said king's natural subjects, and yet that have given him aid with their ships, victuals, and munition, as is above-said, to withdraw all their said ships prepared for the war, and all their provisions for hostility, out of any haven of Spain or Portugal, and from the company and service with the king's ships against our navy, and therewith to return, either to their own countries, or, if they so shall like, to come to our navy; to whom, in the reverend name of our sovereign lady the queen's majesty, we do promise all security, both for their persons and goods, to be used and defended as friends, and to suffer all their ships and provisions that were either taken by the king of Spain, or intended for his services, and that shall be by the owner withdrawn from his aid, to remain in their own free dispositions, so as the same be used in all sorts as friends, and

ANNO
1596.

261

ANNO not enemies to the queen's majesty, and to us her generals.
 1596. And if any shall, upon knowledge of this her majesty's most honourable order, and of our promise to observe the same as favourably as we may, willingly and manifestly refuse to accept this our offer, and shall not endeavour themselves to perform this reasonable request, tending to their good and liberty, we shall then be justly moved, as by the law of arms we may, to take and use all such, for refusing this our offer, as manifest aiders of the king of Spain with forces to invade her majesty's dominions, and so, manifest enemies to us. And in such cause of that refusal, if any harm shall happen by any attempts to be made against their persons, ships, and goods, by any of our navy for their aiding of the said king, there shall be no just cause for them hereafter to complain, or to procure their natural princes and lords to solicit restitution or amends for the same.

And for the more notification hereof, we have thought good to have the original hereof to be signed with our hands and with our seals, to be seen by any that will require to read or see the same: and likewise we have put the same in print, in French, Italian, Dutch, and Spanish. And have
 262 also caused the same to be distributed into as many parts of Spain and Portugal as conveniently might be, for the better knowledge to be had in the said parts.

Number CXCIV.

A prayer of thanksgiving for the queen's success against Spain, in the year 1596: composed by the lord treasurer Burghley, July 3. Printed in a sheet of paper. This transcribed from his own MS.

O LORD God of hosts, everlasting and most merciful Father; we thine unworthy creatures yield unto thy divine Majesty all possible praise and humble thanks for thine infinite benefits, which thou hast of long time plentifully poured upon thine handmaiden and humble servant, our

sovereign lady and queen, and upon her whole realm, and
us her subjects, the people of this kingdom. And namely, ANNO
1596.
O Lord, for thy gracious respecting us in the merits of thy
dear Son our Saviour, and by his interest passing over
and forgiving our manifold sins: Thou hast this present
summer so favourably conducted the royal navy and army,
sent to the seas by our gracious queen, (not for any other
worldly respect, but only for the defence of this realm and
us thy people, against the mighty preparations of our ene-
mies, threatening our ruin,) by safely directing them unto
places appointed, and by strengthening the governors and
leaders of the same with counsel and resolution; and bless-
ing them with notable victories, both by sea and land:
whereby the insolencies and pride of our enemies, which
sought our conquest and subversion, is by these late victo-
ries daunted, repulsed, and abated.

Grant unto us, most merciful Father, the grace with due
thankfulness to acknowledge thy fatherly goodness extended
upon us by thy singular favour shewed to thy servant and
minister, our sovereign lady and queen. And for thy holy
name continue these thy wonderful blessings upon us, to
defend us against our enemies, and bless us with thy grace-
ful hand, to the endless praise of thy holy name, and to
our lasting joy.

And direct our armies by thy providence and favourable
support, to finish these late victories, to the honour of
our sovereign, and safety of her realm, that hath most care-
fully made the same able to overmatch her enemies: so as
the noblemen and all others serving in the same navy and
army in their charge, may with much honour, triumph, and
safety, return home to their countries, and to give thee due
thanks for thy special favour marvellously shewed unto
them, in preserving of them all this summer-time from all
contagion and mortality by sword or sickness; notwith-
standing their force and violence most manfully exercised
against their enemies, to the vanquishing great numbers
both by sea and land, and to the destruction of their most
mighty ships that heretofore have attempted to invade this

ANNO
1596.

realm, and of their forts and castles, and waste of their notable substances of their churches, without hurting any person that did yield, or of any women or children, or religious persons. To whom all favour was shewed that they did require.

All which prosperous successes we do most justly acknowledge, O Lord, to have proceeded from thy special favour. To whom, with thy Son, and the Holy Ghost, be all honour and praise. *Amen.*

Set forth by authority.

Number CXC.

Hutton, archbishop of York, to the lord treasurer: advising what is necessary to be done in this time of great danger: and for an ecclesiastical commission for those parts.

My most honourable good lord,

I WOULD be right sorry, that your lordship's want of health should hinder her majesty's service now, when the whole land standeth most in need of your wise and grave counsel. I pray God it be not an occasion of some great plague for our sins. The enemy groweth strong and prospereth: good men and valiant men are taken away on our side; wise men are enfeebled to do as heretofore, and as they would do: and yet the most of us live in security. The Lord be merciful unto us.

I beseech your lordship, give me leave to inform your good lordship what I wish were presently done. 1. That most special care be had of the guarding of her majesty's most royal person. 2. That all offices of state and in the court be presently furnished with the fittest men, &c. 3. That a perfect reconciliation be made among the nobility, wheresoever there hath been any jarring: that all may join together to fight *pro rege, lege, et grege*; but cannot be perfectly done, except by true repentance we be first reconciled to God. And indeed that is the first. I beseech your lordship pardon my boldness, and continue your care: that

this poor country [of York and the north] may have a lord president and lord lieutenant; and that the ecclesiastical commission may be renewed: it is for God's glory, and her majesty's service. And I have been a suitor to have it renewed, more than a year. And now I send my man for that purpose.

ANNO
1596.

The Lord bless you, and restore you to your perfect health again. From York, the 3d of May, 1596.

Your good lordship's in Christ most assured,

Matth. Ebor.

Number CXCVI.

264

Part of a letter from a person unknown of the clergy, to a person of quality; shewing the rigour of judge Anderson towards the clergy and preachers of Lincolnshire, when he went the assizes there, in charging them with Brownism. Writ from Alford.

..... SHALL I presume to be tedious unto you, and to trouble you with a sorrowful discourse, if I may. The case of our country [Lincoln] is this.

Since my lord Anderson hath obtained to ride this circuit, [in the year 1596,] the ministry is grown into intolerable contempt: which is universally imputed unto him, both by those that would, and those that would not have it so. I am not ignorant how dangerous it is to speak the truth of mighty men, and how unlawful it is by the word of God to malign the rulers of the people. Neither, I thank God, have I any affection to blot paper with depraving words. And therefore I will only report to you what is done, and no further.

My lord Anderson, in his first and second charge at Lincoln, insinuated, with wonderful vehemency, that the country is troubled with Brownists, with disciplinarians, as he called them, and erectors of presbyteries. I speak the truth to you, sir: having been at Alford these fourteen years, I never heard of any Brownist, but only one Tho. Man, who

ANNO
1596.

presently fled upon his schism: nor do know any minister or other in all this country that doth so much as favour the erecting of a presbytery. Neither are the people made acquainted with the controversy of discipline in all Lindsey coast that I can perceive: for men have enough to do to stand by that religion which her blessed majesty hath approved unto us by her express laws. Nevertheless, the ill-affected people, upon the occasion these two charges, do think all religion will be made Brownism. And this judge, with so much wrath, so many oaths, and such reproachful revilings upon the bench, carrieth himself, that there is offence taken at it, by persons of principal credit and note, throughout all the circuits.

If he take information from covert papists of the state of the church there, how lamentable shall our case be!

Judge
Anderson's
charge at
the assizes.

There have been assayes given to extend the statute of recusancy to those that go to hear sermons elsewhere, though at other times they frequent their own church, and hear divine service most dutifully. In this charge this last time he called the preachers knaves, saying, that they would start up in the pulpit and speak against every body. And whereas there was the last Lent obtained by lord Clinton, and the deputy lieutenants for those parts, with other justices, the bishop's allowance, with certain conditions, for a meeting to be held at Lowth, to spend the whole day in the hearing of the word, wherein men might fast if they would;

265 and thereupon certain preachers, being moved by them, preached there, and urged thereupon the statute for conventicles, and animated the grand jury accordingly, affirming, that he would complain to her majesty of any (though never so great) which should shew themselves discontented with the jury for any such matter.

The demeanour of him and the other judge, as they sit by turns upon the gaol, (with reverence I speak it,) in these matters, is flat opposite: and they which are maliciously affected, when Mr. Justice Clinch sitteth upon the gaol, do labour to adjourn their complaints (though they be before upon the file) to the next assize: and the gentlemen in the

several shires are endangered by this means to be cast into a faction. The best is, that there is little faction likely to grow among the ministers hereby : for howsoever they differ otherwise, they hold this to be the common cause, and do heartily wish a more Christian proceeding. Now the reason why a faction is like to grow in the one, and not in the other, is very evident : and that is this, that there are very few in the ministry which are papists in their hearts. And the most must needs love the common cause of religion : for the other sort, you are wise enough to consider the difference.

ANNO

1596.

Ministers
here.

Will you hear some instances of these proceedings. First, by credible information at Northampton, he shewed himself greatly grieved at him which preached at the assizes there. At Leicester likewise with the preacher there ; where he also fell out with the high sheriff, and shewed himself displeased with the grand jury ; both upon the same occasion. And at Nottingham there was offensive variance between him and one of the justices about such matters. Only they say, one Beaver, a preacher about Nottinghamshire, contentiously and dangerously, opposite to all the godly and learned preachers of those parts, in a question about the sacrament, to wit, that it was not necessary to inquire how Christ is present in it ; preaching before him and others, shewing the contradiction of his spirit, pleased him well, and was kindly used by him. As for others, he is informed, (as seemeth by his own speeches,) and so taketh it also himself, (when he heareth them himself,) that they rail upon him : wherupon he cometh inflamed with wrath to the bench. When the cause is inquired into, they will lament, which may do no more than lament ; and they will be angry, which may be angry by authority.

And that which is certainly known at Lincoln, Mr. Allen, some time the preacher at Lowth, a man well accepted, by occasion of some variance between a justice of peace and him about a lease, which the justice would have of his parsonage, was indirectly and strangely pursued. He was indicted by the said justice's means for not reading all [the prayers] at once, among other like things, being a good preacher, (as

ANNO
1586.

you know,) and using to omit part of it, for the sermon. (Of his offence of law I can say nothing; but these two things I can avouch: first, that he sheweth conformable affections, being a man that is well liked of the bishop, and hath subscribed: secondly, that I have never heard in any cases of like quality (the party being so submissive and tractable) the like proceeding in all my life, nor of like effect. Mr. 266 Allen was caused to go to the bar, and commanded to hold up his hand there: and my lord Anderson standing up, bent himself towards him with a strange fierceness of countenance. To be brief, after he had insinuated some grievous faults (but unnamed) against the man, to move some offensive suspicion to the standers by, he called him one of the great distempers, putting him out of countenance, and not suffering to speak for himself. He called him *knave* oftentimes, and *rebellious knave*, with manifold reproaches besides: whereby (I am not about to speak at large, but a most true word unto you) all the honest hearts in the shire were grieved, and the ungodly were notably animated. The simple people rejoiced in their return homeward, saying, that a minister's cause could not be so much as heard at the assizes, and gathered, that all preaching was now, as it were, cried down.

My lord Anderson said indeed, in his charge, that he would hunt all the puritans out of his circuit: and so said his man Joh. Anderson, before he came to his circuit. And as for this John, I am afraid he meaneth by puritans all, both papists and atheists.

Allen's arraignment.

This one thing was worth the marking in Mr. Allen's arraignment, (for so it was generally called in the country,) that the bishop sitting by very silent, when Mr. Allen, upon some speech, wherein judgment in divinity is required, referred himself in that point to his ordinary there sitting, the judge entertained that speech with marvellous indignation, affirming, that he was his ordinary and the bishop both, in that place, and daring all that should take his part. Insomuch that sir George Sampal, sitting on that other side of the judge, might not be endured with patience to say

softly, that Mr. Allen was an honest man, and of good conversation, though he be universally so reputed.

To have qualified this proceeding, there was means used before. For many preachers, knowing the judge's humour, went to the bishop, to entreat him to labour the judge to more mildness than his custom was: which the bishop promised to do. And after it was past, in like manner a great number of the ministers, being that day in Lincoln about provision of their armour, lamented his proceeding as their general hurt.

There was another minister also at the assizes strangely handled, ever through the bare opinion which wicked men have of this judge. The name of the man was Aderster, of Gosbertowne: he had belike before, some years past, passed some undecent and indiscreet speeches, for which he deserved censure; and had been accordingly deeply censured, both ecclesiastically and civilly, until that at last the matter was advanced to the high commission at London. In conclusion, my lord's grace of Canterbury, wisely apprehending belike the distinction that was in the cause, to wit, both that the party had spoken intolerable words, and that his adversaries exhibited them in other construction than ever he intended, after that the man was sufficiently humbled by silencing and deprivation, and other like censures, (as he thought,) he thought fit to recommend him, and to license him again to preach through his whole province; dealing otherwise also very favourably with him. And yet this man, forsooth, was brought by his warrant to the assizes, and there had the old matter objected against 267 him again; and notwithstanding these allegations, could not be dismissed without divers encumbrances and bonds. In this proceeding, who seeth not what opinion these accusers had of this judge, to bring such a matter before him?

Alas! sir, what discontentments will these things breed, if there be no redress! The higher magistrates are very honourable and wise, and know best what they have to do. *Malo nodo malus cuneus*, is a true proverb: and the sense is true. But I will pray for some which are more employed

ANNO
1596.

than watched, though well enough are known, that they seek not *notum in scirpo*. Most certainly, sir, there are no schisms in this country that give occasion to these proceedings. I would to God it would please the rt. hon. lords of her majesty's council to cause an uniform interpretation of all the statutes for church causes; wherein the judges do differ in opinion. For want thereof it cometh to pass, that the same cause at the selfsame time, in divers parts of the realm, is diversly, yea in effect contrarily judged and enforced upon juries: the same cause, I say, without differing in any one circumstance, save only in the opinion and affection of the judges. And I would to God, that they which judge in religious causes, though in the name of civil affairs, would either get some more knowledge in religion and God's word than my lord Anderson hath, or else might be assisted in all such causes by those which have.

My lord Anderson was *bonus murus* (like) for Martin [Marprelate] and such like. But, alas! to what purpose have we kept the people ignorant all this while of all those questions and courses, if for our labour now, we and many more of her majesty's most loving subjects shall be introduced fautors of that which we have always oppugned? Well, we will not be discouraged in our loyal affection to her majesty; but we will comfort ourselves with our rude country proverb, that we are persuaded *that much water goes by the mill that the miller never knows of*: yea, we are assured, that her majesty would not have her own religion discountenanced, nor her quiet and loving people disquieted and grieved.

Number CXCVII.

Day, bishop of Winton, deceased this year: whose last will bare date Sept. the 11th, 1596; and was acknowledged by the testator as his last will, Sept. 15: and was proved by the executors Oct. 2. Which will the pious bishop thus began:

I WILLIAM DAY, by God's permission, lord bishop

of Winchester, being whole in mind, and sick in body, ANNO 1590.
 (thanks be to Almighty God,) make this my last will and
 testament, &c. First, I commend my soul into the hands of
 Almighty God, my Creator, trusting verily that he will re-
 ceive it to his mercy for Jesus Christ's sake, my only re- 268
 deemer, mediator, and advocate; nothing doubting but that
 the same Spirit that raised Christ from death will also
 quicken my mortal body, and make it like to his glorious
 body, by that power whereby he is able to subdue all things
 to himself.—By the legacies of his will it appears he left a
 wife; to whom he bequeathed one standing cup with a cover,
 whole gilt, weighing 35 ounces, and a chafingdish of silver,
 weighing 28 ounces, a spout-pot of silver, and feather-bed,
 &c. Two sons, William and Richard, his executors: and
 unto his son Richard all his books, saving such English
 books as his son William should choose. And a daughter,
 Elizabeth; to whom he gave 500*l.* to be delivered to her
 within two years after his death. Rachel Barker, his grand-
 daughter, and Elizabeth Barker, his sister; legacies to them
 also. His daughter Ridley; to her, four angels, to make
 her a ring. To his daughter Susan Cox, and her sister
 Rachel Barker, and Elizabeth Day, one portague of gold to
 each; which commonly weigh value at seven angels.

Number CXCVIII.

This year put an end also to Fletcher, bishop of London, who seems to have died under the queen's displeasure: the occasion whereof was his marrying a lady not long before his death. See some account of it in Archbishop Whitgift's Life, book iv. ch. 13. His letter to the lord treasurer in behalf of his brother Dr. Fletcher, to be made an extraordinary master in chancery, as Dr. Caesar was.

HE had a brother, Dr. Fletcher, a civilian, a person of note and use in those times, employed by the queen in several honourable embassies abroad: in whose behalf the

ANNO
1596.

bishop in this last year of his life wrote an earnest letter to the lord treasurer, which was as followeth; *To be made as Dr. Cæsar, an extraordinary master in chancery.*

As I have found your lordship's honourable aid to me in my occasions, so I humbly pray your lordship to give me leave to be a mover and solicitor hereby for my brother, Dr. Fletcher, to your good lordship: whom, if he were not as he is, I might truly commend to your lordship, to be worthy of regard. But your lordship hath much signified your honour's respect of him, his service, in place where he is, being of much pain and employment without intermission, is notwithstanding accompanied by a stipend very unproportionable to his charge and labours. And yet is obnoxious to a people that are jealous of all dealing and solicitation even of their own agents; especially in matters of expenses and charges imposed, as if their negligence or subordination were the cause thereof. On the other side, there
269 followeth him the mislike and displeasure of great persons; for that he is enforced oftentimes to deliver unto them many unpleasing and denying messages on the city's behalf; and to solicit against the immoderate desires of some noblemen and others of the court. Wherein he cannot find that moderation, but in very few, to excuse the messenger for the duty of his place.

Your lordship also best knoweth his employments in his majesty's and his country's services in Scotland with Mr. Randolph, in Germany, Hamburgh, and Stade, with very good effect of the trade, till this day. In Russia, for the repair of the English intercourse then interrupted, and in a manner dissolved; but since greatly increased, and in special sort continued: the regard of all which toward him, consisteth yet in favour to come. It hath pleased her majesty, in other matters besides these, to take knowledge of him; and at his going to Russia, to admit him extraordinary of the requests. And if now it may like her highness, that in this infirmity of Mr. Rockbie he might stand as Dr. Cæsar did, and so, upon occasion befalling, to be called further to that place of service, he would be found faithful. Where-

unto if by your lordship's good and favourable word in his behalf, as opportunity may serve, he shall find furtherance, ANNO
1596.
your lordship shall increase his duty and service with all faithfulness to your lordship, and add more to both our prayers and observance, which unfeignedly we owe always to your honour. Whom I pray God to bless with cheerfulness and comfort of body and mind in all your lordship's manifold and great affairs. From Fulham, the 17th of May.

Your lordship's ever in Christ bounden,

Rich. London.

Number CXCIX.

Henry earl of Huntington, lord president of the council in the north, concluded his life this year: of whom Hugh Broughton, the great learned man for all Jewish learning, soon after his death, had these words:

“MY honourable patron, whose rest is in paradise: whom my pen must honour; for that he was so deep for judgment in the chief heads of all the Bible: so sincere for affection in the heart of religion, that he is not like ever to be overmatched by any.”

And Ockland, a learned poet in those times, in his book, entitled *Elizabetha*, (wherein are characters given of the queen's great ministers,) hath these verses of the said earl:

*Hic veterum libros ineunte ætate studendo,
Qui Græce sophiam, vel qui scripsere Latine,
Voluit; collusor puero post seria regi:
Magnorum antiqua regum de stirpe propago.
Præconem hic sacrum satrapas attentior audit,
Exprimit, et vita morum pictate relucens.*

Eduardi
regis con-
discipulus
et collusor.

ANNO
1596.

Number CC.

270 *Dr. Jegon, vice-chancellor of the university of Cambridge, to their high chancellor, concerning the lectures to be read at Gresham college. Jealous of the injury those lectures might occasion to the university.*

Right honourable my singular good lord,

MAY it please you to understand, that whereas certain lectures were lately founded by sir Thomas Gresham deceased, to be read within the city of London by professors of several arts, to be chosen by the lord mayor and commonalty of that city; the said mayor and his brethren have directed letters to our university of Cambridge, requesting us to nominate unto them two of our meetest men in every faculty; with like petition made to the university of Oxenford, to name two other. Out of which four they would elect one for every lecture, as by the copy of that letter may more at large appear.

Wherein doubting that in time it may be greatly prejudicial to our university, I have refrained to do any thing, until I mought have your honour's allowance thereof. So most humbly praying to know your pleasure therein, I recommend my service to your lordship's commands. At Cambridge, Jan. the 30th, 1596.

Your honour's most bounden ever,

Jo. Jegon, vice-chan.

Number CCI.

William Lambarde, a justice of peace in Kent, a learned antiquarian, that wrote the Perambulation of Kent, and Eircnarchia, his letter to the lord treasurer Burghley, concerning the last will of the lord Cobham, (who died this year,) and some of his legacies. He was constable of Dover castle, and lord chamberlain to the queen.

ALBERT, my most honourable and gracious lord, that my lord Cobham will present your lordship with a brief

ANNO
1596.

and large copy of the last will of that most honourable and Christian lord both in life and death, his late departed good father; yet forasmuch as his last disposition standeth not only in his known testament, but chiefly in the declaration of a secret confidence reposed in sir Joh. Leveson, Mr. Tane, the lieutenant of Dover castle, and myself; whereof he hath also in these his last desires recommended the oversight to your good lordship and Mr. Secretary, I take it to stand both with his own good pleasure and my duty, 271 to make known hereby (since your lordship's indisposition of body permitteth not mine access) the heads and very contents of the same.

His lordship therefore minding an undoubted accomplishment of his godly and fatherly intentions, as well towards the poor, as his own children, did in his lifetime put into the hands of sir John Leveson the sum of 5,600*l.* almost in ready money, over and besides rich furniture of his late lady's provision, amounting in his own estimation to the valöre of 2000 marks. His commandment to us was, that with 2000*l.* or more of these monies, the late suppressed college of Cobham should be reedified, and endowed with livelihood for the perpetual maintenance of twenty poor. Next, that with 2000*l.* or thereabouts, his second son, sir William Bröök, should be freed out of debt. For to so much he knew him to be endangered by mortgage of his lands and leases, and by other bonds. And lastly, that an interest for life in some competent dwelling-house be procured for his third son, Mr. Geo. Brook. And that some consideration should be taken of the poor estate of his daughter's children by Mr. Edward Bocher. As for these furnitures, he would have them to be delivered to such of his three sons as should first bestow himself in marriage.

Give me leave, most honourable lord, to add somewhat of his and of mine, concerning my now lord Cobham and his brethren: which neither it will grieve you to hear, nor I, without their wrong, may premit to write. We find them all not only to concur in most cheerful obedience to the utmost execution of their good father's will and pur-

ANNO
1596.

poses, but also to contend among themselves, whether of them shall be more kind and bountiful to the other. Whereof I most humbly beseech your good lordship to take knowledge, and to confirm it in them with your good liking; their honourable father being moved by me to use them, or some of them, now, for the execution of his will, however in the setting down of his former wills he had pretermitted them, in regard, as I conceived, of their minorities. He answered thus, I would well to follow the example of my father herein; who, notwithstanding that I and other of my brethren were then of man's estate, ordained Benedict Spinola and Mr. Osborn to be his executors.

I have said enough, if not too much, considering the present weakness of your lordship's body: which I most heartily pray the heavenly Physician to recure. And so most humbly take my leave. From Lincoln's Inn, the 15th of March.

Your good lordship's most humble, and bounden,
by your manifold favours,

Will. Lambarde.

272

Number CCII.

The copy of a letter, written by Ribadencyra, the Jesuit, to D. Juan de Idiaque. Bearing date the 10th of March, 1596. Translated out of Spanish. Upon the defeat of the Spaniard at Cales. It seems to be a letter intercepted.

I FEARFULLY behold the judgments of God hanging over our heads, and see that we live only by miracle: that the enemy so soon left Cales; that they so courteously used their captives; that the tumults of the grandees and gentry of this kingdom (which are swollen full of wrath against ye that govern the king) should be so soon pacified; that the India fleet escaped when the enemy was shipping at the Cape, watching for it, surely was by miracle; and your lordship knoweth what a great scourge it would have been to all Christendom, if any of these had fallen out

otherwise in this so necessitous a time. Certainly we cannot live always in this manner: and therefore must seek means to remedy it: for if we do not help it by one way or other, I fear I may too properly cite the sentence of a great author, *Quorum Deus vult mutare fortunam, corrumpit consilia.*

ANN()
1590.

Verily, sir, I am much grieved, and my soul hath oftentimes been thoroughly vexed to hear in this occasion how the multitude murmure against his majesty, saying, He neither doth any thing himself, nor will give way to others. Therefore are they determining to make the prince to rise, and with him to seek amendment of these many mischiefs. And the more discreet men of the best rank wish that God would take away the king, or the people possess themselves of the prince. And this resentment I understand is general. God my Saviour help us. What hath this holy man done, (for such I hold the king *coram Deo*;) what, I say, hath this man done, that even those that love him best, desire his life may endure no longer? I have asked the causes; it is answered, He neither doth, nor will suffer others to reform these abuses. [And so the letter endeth.]

Number CCIII.

273

Anthony Coply, a popish gentleman, now a prisoner: some time in service abroad: his informations after his return, concerning affairs in Flanders, Spain, &c. To Mr. Will. Wade, 1596. Addressed to the lords.

BEING in my return home to England, a faithful and voluntary return to all the duties of a true subject towards prince and country, I do willingly and humbly obey, so far forth as I am able, to advertise hereby such particulars of estate beyond the seas as may any ways redound to the good of my country; at least discharge my duty in so doing, according as I am thereunto by commission enjoined.

First therefore and foremost, touching the state of Flan-Flanlers, ders, so it is, (for ought I could ever gather of the speeches

ANNO
1596.

and discourses of men, as well natives of the land, as soldiers of all nations in those parts,) that the prince of Parma now of late hath lost his credit and the good-will of either kingdom; being his demeanour (ever since the time that the king of Spain withdrew the garrisons out of Placenze, and other his forts about Parma) much altered in the Low Countries from that it hath been heretofore; namely, as well in his services towards the said king, as in other his worthy conditions, which made him heretofore so much honoured and beloved. For being his estate in Italy, (by occasion aforesaid,) free from all Spanish subjection, since that time, as it hath been noted of the more politic sort of his court, (for myself, under correction, will not affirm for truth any thing I here set down touching the said prince, neither can I,) only I will explain unto your honours what I have perceived, during my being in Flanders, by the discourse of the better sort of men there, to be the present state of those parts.

And touching the prince of Parma, that he polled Flanders daily for Italy's sake: where in the town of Parma it is thought he hath an infinite treasure; and is supposed to exceed in riches at this present any one duke of Italy beside.

The means he useth in Flanders for such his enrichment is both upon the burghers and upon the soldiers too. Upon the burgher by mean of the soldier in this sort. He determineth beforehand what town to make his hand of: which being conceived, then conformably he giveth order to some one regiment or other to march toward that town, with commission to be billeted there that winter, or so long as is ordained. Now the poor burghers and inhabitants of that place, rather than to have soldiers harboured among them, (which is a wonderful undoing of towns in the Low Countries,) being the soldiers while they live so wondrous ill paid, that needs they must grate upon the poor burghers for inere necessity, they will rather present his highness, to
274 the end to be exempt of such distresses, a substantial sum of money at once, or else compound to be his tributary, so

long paying monthly or quarterly so much as between the prince and them shall be agreed upon.

ANNO
1596.

This is one of his most ordinary and often means he useth every winter season. And this means is worth him yearly infinitely, as may be conceived.

Other shifts he useth, but of smaller moment, whereby he the rather easily bringeth his riches about, by reason divers naughty nobility of the land (who have their shares therein) endeavour to induce the commons to it for their own advantage. Insomuch as the burgher beginneth already to spy the fraud of their nobles; and wish in their common discourse, that rather a duke of Alva might govern them again: who indeed, quoth they, plagued our nobility; but in the mean time the commons were spared, and committed to their profit without extrusion.

Now touching the advantage his highness maketh of the soldier. He forceth them to be content with their pay in coarse northern baize, kersies, scammotts, base silks and satins, and such like trash, as is uttered to them at a price twice more than the worth. Insomuch as when with much ado a soldier hath obtained a libranca of an 100 crowns of his pay to be paid him in those kinds of stuffs, (which otherwise is not granted,) then goeth he to Antwerp to the librador, (which is an officer there purposely ordained to discharge such comers with such payment,) and is by one in the number, (and none may go to other than his shop,) he must, when all comes to all, be content with one part of three, and very little more. As, for his 100 crowns, to take an 100 franks. And so *Via*, away. Then doth the merchant in the town, who buyeth this stuff of the soldier, (for it is good for no use,) bring the said stuff again into the librador's shop, whence first it came, only accepting for his pains a miserie, God-wot, and so departeth. Insomuch as one piece, I have seen myself, in one day brought in and delivered out again to new comers [no] less than six times. So that one piece oftentimes serveth an hundred comers and more: which to the end it may be the better able to do, the merchants abroad in the town are secretly forbidden, not to buy of the soldier, but whole pieces ever, as

ANNO
1596.

they are delivered out of the first shop, to the end it may be the more able to serve many. Mean time the clerks of the offices at Brussels, whence all these libranças or decrees of the prince proceedeth, and are enregistered, account them to the king, as importing good pay to the soldier; while in the mean time the king is thus abused, and the soldier wonderfully discontented. Thus of three parts, the soldier is glad of one, and the prince enjoyeth the rest.

Which dealing the Spaniard in Flanders perceiving, two regiments of them mutinied twice in one year's space. For the which the one was reformed and cast, to their wonderful discontentment, having been a regiment standing in their colours well nigh eighty years, and continually employed in the services of their country ever since the beginning. And the other is now in France; the duke of
275 king while he was in Flanders: and therefore, in very discontented sort, this time twelvemonth, took his leave, with much ado, of his prince, and returned to Spain: where it is thought he hath particularly informed the king of all.

The Spaniard.

The Spaniard supposeth the prince of Parma his alienation to proceed out of England, imputing much treason to him in his admittance of her majesty's ambassadors the year 88. At which time, in being faithful to the king in his action, and preparations for England, they say, he was more a friend to England than Spain. Briefly, the Spaniard seeing how much the prince wracketh all the riches of Flanders into Italy, and how little he hath availed the king since of late time, towards the recovery and subjection of his Low Countries; namely, and especially perceiving how at this present Italians they be for the most part about him, that rule the roast: also the nobility of the Low Countries, how much they begin daily more and more Italianated, and is very affectionated: likewise, seeing themselves disgraced in the court, and little set by in respect, they adjudge him in hucker-mucker an enemy to their king and the estate. Insomuch as the wiser of them suppose, that their king dared not all this while depose him from his charge of the Low Countries, lest having, as he hath, the

riches of the land, and the hearts of the nobility, he may chance to become a prince of Orange, and more than he, considering his present might and power in Italy likewise. ANNO
1596.

But, say they, if treason should shew itself, yet have we a son of his in Spain, in our king's hand. And

Touching the king of Spain's fleet, it is so that he hath ^{Spain's} one in perfect readiness in the port of Bisca and Galicia, ^{fleet.} and his men in all readiness along these coasts, attending to be employed. Albeit they have written out of Spain to Spaniards their friends, in Flanders, that artillery is not yet all come out of Italy for the fleet, which is expected.

Hugh Owen. Persons.

Hugh Owen, at his late repair to Flanders, giveth out, that no action is apparently intended in Spain against England this year nor next ensuing. Howbeit Persons hath written down much assurance to the contrary; putting the matter out of all doubt and controversy.

Doway.

The citizens of Doway have sued of late to have the English seminary at Rhemes again in their town: were it not the wars along these parts of France, (which is likely to endanger their safe passage by the way,) it is thought they would: for, as I understand, English begin to be weary of Rhemes by reason of the wars thereabouts. In respect of which they are with the rest of the inhabitants put to watch and ward the town at their turns.

Sir William Stanley

Is in Spain lacking no maintenance, as I hear, but credit to be employed.

English catholics abroad. Cripps

276

Hath been lately well rewarded by the king of Spain for his sea-service against the Turk.

In fine, my good lords, so it is, that divers English gentlemen there are beyond the seas, whose faith to England and her majesty's happy estate is most sincere and loyal; and who only for their conscience (for ought I could ever know to the contrary) have betaken themselves to foreign infelicity and misadventures; willing, if occasion were, to lose life and all for England and her majesty, might they

ANNO
1596.

by your honours' favours be but permitted to live at home. But, so it is, that surely the misery a great many of them sustain abroad, (not malice to our country,) makes them now and then speak at all adventures, as desperate men. Whereas, if with mercy, they say, they might be permitted to come and live at home, doubtless their truth to prince and country would be unfeigned.

I cannot indeed, neither will I, my good lords, execute the malice of a great many; who, as their state is desperate at home, so foresee they little what event betide our country. Such be those as either be condemned traitors at home, or have by their notorious disservices at home deserved amiss, as my lord of Westmerland, sir Will. Stanley, cardinal Allen, Paget, and the rest: or else such as being themselves but base fellows, and born to no good fortune in England, neither have they within themselves wherewith to deserve good fortune, being their minds but base either to do or suffer honourably, wish perchance, with all their hearts, mischief to our dear country, and a troubled water, wherein to catch fishes.

These are such as have either been base serving tacks in England, and fain would be gentlemen abroad, or else do come over for some egregious villainies by them at home committed, justly perchance deserving the gallows.

But now to make an end of mine own particular. Surely, right honourable, myself was always of those kind of gentlemen beyond the seas, as always did honour and pray for the happy state of my country, and am ready to [venture] 10,000 lives for the same against all the enemies and invaders thereof, if need require. And in this true and sincere mind I hope to continue to my life's end. And whereas I served with the enemy in Flanders, which is the demerit for which I rest presently in durance, and answerable to the justice of the law; my good lords and right honourable, I humbly submit my life to favour for the same with all humility. May my death in her majesty's service, in the behalf of my country, make amends hereafter for such my offence. I vow it, at all occasions in my heart; and by these lines of mine own writing, to her majesty, my coun-

try, and your honours all. And with this mind ventured I lately into England, my good lords, even at all adventures; not so much curious to come in with a pardon, as because I know my heart guilty of all love and duty to my country, willing and resolved in time to come well to deserve. Favour me, therefore, my honourable good lords, and pardon the fault of my indiscretion hitherto, humbly I beseech you.

If I departed the realm but a child, I am returned yet 277 young enough to serve it many years. I am not waxed old in my offence to my country, but more able I return home to serve it, than when, but a child, I departed from it. And if I fare well at your honours' hands, it may chance other gentlemen will return home, who are yet beyond seas. Who because they thought themselves wiser a great deal than I, rather gave place to my ambition to return home foremost, than themselves would venture it.

Anthony Copley.

Number CCIV.

Another letter of Mr. Copley to the lords of the council, concerning English gentlemen abroad.

ACCORDING to your demand, I have here underneath expressed such particulars of particular English gentlemen and others of our nation as are known unto me beyond the seas; namely, their abodes; where their entertainment; what it is; and how I have found them inclined, so far forth as by conversation I could conceive of them, or by privy discourse of others attain unto.

Cardinal Allen and D. Lewis, who is presently bishop of Casane, a city of the kingdom of Naples, I understand are at odds with one another, and at jealousies touching points of honour. In respect of which, in a manner, all Englishmen in Italy, namely, the seminary in Rome, is divided into faction: the one holding with the cardinal, the other with the bishop.

ANNO
1596.

The cardinal's living is valued at this present at 15,000 crowns by the year: which is 4500 of our pounds. His archbishopric of Macklin in Brabant, I hear, he will exchange for an abbey in Spain, or, as other say, exchange the revenues thereof with the king of Spain for a certain sum of money, yearly to be paid him out of the king's exchequer in Spain and Flanders: for by reason of the wars in Brabant the said bishopric is not yearly worth him alike; and therefore rather choosing a certain for it of the king yearly, than to stand at the courtesy of the wars, what it may afford him.

Bishop
Lewis.

Contrarywise bishop Lewis contenteth himself, as I hear, very well with the little he hath, in respect of the cardinal, and maintaineth his credit well in the pope's court: for he is a very courtly and courteous gentleman, affable, and withal esteemed very wise.

Of their affections and actions against England, surely, sir, I can say nothing. Only, I suppose, they are both presently so well settled, that if they will regard but their own particular, and be content with their own good fortunes, they need not of them be busy, in war matters, tending to the destruction of this their noble country. They hope for
278 a far greater preferment in Italy than England can yield them; if, as men say, to be one day pope is the sum of either their desires.

Cardinal Allen hath about him divers English gentlemen; as Mr. Banes, who hath been long out of England, and sometimes in Poland with the young cardinal of that country; a gentleman of some forty years of age, or rather upward, well languaged, and otherwise very well qualified, discreet, secret, and inclined to high matters. He is a cardinal's secretary of outlandish languages.

Tho. Hesket.

Thomas Heskett is the cardinal's nephew; a virtuous young man: and that is all. He likewise is chief with his

John
Thatcher.

said uncle. John Thatcher is another: a Sussex youth well conditioned, of civil behaviour: discovered to bear the

Lampson.

state of England great good-will. One Lampson, the prince of Liege's secretary, is this day concluded beyond sea for

another. Mr. Dethike is supposed placed there out of Eng-
land for another. And indeed great matters are laid to his
charge touching England. Of all which notwithstanding, I
suppose, he hath by this time wisely cleared himself against
his accusers. And there may remain many years to do his
country service; if he be, as is thought, so well affected.

ANNO
1596.

Dethike.

Monsieur de Champagne is thought an extreme enemy to the present state of England.

It should seem by the discourses of Spaniards in Flanders, that their king in his next voyage now in hand for England, to the former pretence of religion, will add a claim to the realm by right of inheritance, as descended directly by the line of Portugal from Edmund Crookback; whom, they say, was in that respect unjustly put beside the crown; and therefore that line all this while unjustly defeated of the same.

It is supposed the prince of Parma will hereafter be passing slow in his services in France against the French king. And this is sure, that never yet, since his entrance into France, hath he joined his camp in battail or esquadron with the leaguers; and always hath had it apart from them.

Surely in this respect is highly commended abroad her majesty's policy, in not condescending to assist the states of the Low Countries against the Spaniards, unless they first yielded her majesty special assurance of their faith to her, and pawns for the charges of her wars in their behalf. In respect whereof it is easily noted her majesty hath gotten into her hands the chief keys of all the Low Countries: whereby she hath both means to hold the Spaniard tack, and the States at a bay, in case they should prove false.

Other gentlemen there be, attendants upon the cardinal. Because I know them not, I can aver nothing, either of their conditions or entertainment: only one Haselock, who
was heretofore servant and secretary to the lord prior, sir Richard Shelly, and is now attendant upon the cardinal, is much reckoned upon among Englishmen beyond sea, considering the much dislike and odds had always been between the said parties heretofore.

Haselock.

ANNO 1599. The occasion of which their jealousies (for ought I could ever hear) did hercof arise. That the said lord prior always scorned the two seminaries, so far forth as the cardinal esteemed them the only means for the recovery of England by their practices within the realm; which the lord prior always esteemed a light avail; and was ever more inclined to foreign forces to do it. Notwithstanding that otherwise indeed he allowed it to be holy means for the good of our country, so far as tended to the saving of souls in it, but not as a substantial and sufficient means in policy wholly to reclaim it.

Shelly, lord prior.

279

There was a gentleman in the Florentine court, called Standen, a very sufficient man. I suppose he be yet living there in good reputation. His inclination is judged to be to a conquest of this realm.

Fitz Herbert is a sufficient gentleman, and civil, and attending upon the cardinal.

Smithson is another, but of no great moment.

The cardinal's sister, and his brother, with three of her daughters with her, remain at Namures. He maintaineth them all, but in mean estate.

Two seminaries are begun to be erected in Spain; the one in Toledo, the other in Valedolith. Warford, a sufficient man, a priest, is there. Mr. John Cicil remaineth in Salamanca; a gentleman, I suppose, passing well given to his country, and of very good desert.

There are not many Englishmen pensioners in Spain: but such as be, serve either in the galleys, against the Turk, or in the armada, which is for England.

There is Owen Eaton, once sergeant-major of sir William Stanley's regiment: he serveth in the galleys with Cripps: a man true enough to his country, no doubt. Henry Ireland, John Shelly, and two or three others, whose names I remember not, serve in the armada. I suppose young Stakely be one. All these have pensions, and well provided for. Their chancellor is an English pensioner of the king of Spain's in Naples, there married; and an old stander in those parts.

Olyver Price is very well entertained of the duke of Bavaria, who is much a friend to Englishmen, though not to the present state of England. ANNO
1596.

Now for English gentlemen, and pensioners of the king of Spain, either in France or in Flanders. For that they are many, if you please, I will hereafter give you a particular catalogue of them all, so far forth as either I do know them, or can call them to mind. English-
men, pen-
sioners of
the king of
Spain.

Touching sir William Stanley, no doubt he hath repented himself heartily of his undutiful action of Deventer; and considering the little he is now accounted of, both of the prince in Flanders, and the king in Spain. The undoing of the regiment is his extreme grief and discontent. For now it is almost come to nothing; scarce an 150 men remaining of it. Jaques, I suppose, wisheth himself in Ireland again, seeing how much his hope of advancement in Flanders by sir William Stanley is come now to nothing.

The elder Creak is most maliciously given out against the present state of England, and little careth how soon misfortune light upon it. He hath not his like Englishman for malice to her majesty and the realm in all Flanders: but he is of no judgment nor discretion; and therefore of no sufficiency to do it harm, or deal against it.

As for Paget and Morgan. Morgan's matter being yet 280 in bleeding, and himself still in prison, I suppose neither the one nor the other have leisure at this present to contrive actions against the state; albeit neither of them be esteemed beyond sea other than most true spies, as they call them, and intelligencers for England; having either of them been, by their practices, the death and occasion of many a catholic's trouble here in England; as is there not only believed, but hath been likewise laid to their charges this last year. Howsoever their practices have been from time to time, sure it is they are both accounted most unlucky men, and not at all beloved of catholics beyond sea.

Mr. Tho. Throgmorton is wondrous well liked of catholics beyond sea, and much pitied oft is, that a gentleman of so civil good nature should be so much conversant with

ANNO
1596.

Paget and Morgan, persons so much supposed, as I have said, practisers for England, and the present state thereof.

Hugh Owen and N. Holt have the sovereign dealing for all Englishmen's matters in the Flander court. None can be preferred in that court without their favour, nor obtain any pension there without the liberality of their good word: the one being in credit with the prince's secretary, none more; the other but a very simple soul, none more. Gentlemen are ashamed to sue in court by his means; I mean father Holt; considering indeed he is a man adjudged of no sufficiency, nor good grace; but now held up in that place by cardinal Allen's favour and his own society.

Mr. Tressam, a man esteemed of far more speech than sufficiency any manner of way, either to do his country any good, or hurt it.

Sir Timothy Mocket I suppose no practiser, but content with his own private state as it is.

Mr. Pool no practiser, I suppose, but living after his accustomed manner. Enemy to none but to himself.

The lord of Westmerland, according to his want, poor and careless of all the world. Capstoak, his kinsman, and Lockwood, a follower of him, for late murdering of Alexander Suigo, because he took part with Italians against my lord, are lately absolved by his means.

Of sir Francis Inglefield I can say nothing, nor yet of Persons, other than what I have already declared.

But concerning the opinions and discourses I have heard touching the Spanish action for England. For the Spaniard in Flanders hath wished, that in their last armada their king had sent his daughter towards the Scottish coast directly, with a portion of six or seven millions; and there to have offered her to the Scottish king in marriage: which they suppose the Scottish king would not have refused; but most honourably have accepted of, and granted free landing to their nation; yea, and which is more, concurred with the duke, with the rest of his action for England. Conjecturing the just cause, they say, to revenge his mother's death, if he will prove a true child.

An oversight of the duke of Medina they condemn extremely; namely, whereas being advised at his first entrance into the Straits, by don Alonso de Leiva, to have fired her majesty's ships in Plymouth, he refused so to do; 281 alleging only his commission for Flanders coast: wherein, quoth they, he was too just, and too, too precise an observant.

ANNO
1596.

They affirm likewise, that their last ships were ill built for our seas; to wit, too huge, considering the dexterity of our English sail: which was, quoth they, their great disadvantage. This fault of their shipping, I perceive and understand, is corrected in the fleet which is now in hand for this next year.

But English gentlemen in Flanders at the time of the last armada in our seas, seeing what little countenance the prince of Parma gave them in the camp at land, even then, when the embarking was supposed, it grieved the better sort of them; yea, they sorrowed to see how they were even then disdained of the Spaniard: whose only speech was of combustion, and extreme destruction of our country, if ever they chanced to come ashore. It well appeared, that they little pretended the cause of religion, or any good to it, as our English catholics always supposed.

The lord of Westmerland being braved a little before at the court at Bruges by a Spanish cavalier, who reviled our nation, was told, his king had not need of any English catholics' assistance in that action: that he was of himself mighty enough: that the English catholics would prove but traitors if they were employed: with other like speeches of reproach. My said lord, not able to abide such terms, drew upon him, and surely had murdered the Spaniard, had not the fray been taken up for the present by such as stood by; and the quarrel afterwards taken up between them by the prince himself.

For myself.

Sir, I protest unto you, to see at that time the insolency of the Flanders Spaniards, and the vile destroying mind they shewed they bore towards our country, did so

ANNO
1596.

much make me hate their action, then in hand, that while I live, I protested then in my heart to be true to my country against that nation in special, and all others the enemies thereof.

Lamot would (at that time the Spaniards' armada was understood to be arrived in the Straits) have wagered with sir William Stanley, that never our English fleet would dare abide the fight with the Spaniard, but rather betake themselves to land; there perchance to resist awhile, and fight it out in defence of the realm. But sir William Stanley always maintained the contrary; and persuaded the enemy in his discourses, not to be too confident of their own, nor to be disdainful of our English forces, especially at sea. In which kind of service, he still affirmed, we passed all other nations in the world. The Spaniard was sorry that at least the duke of Medina spoiled not by the way the isles Gersey and Garmesey, as he came along.

The Spaniards' discourses of this next year's armada run much upon Ireland; as though somewhat either is or were best to be intended that way for England.

Strangers
beyond sea,
friends.

282 But touching such strangers beyond sea as are thought friends and intelligencers for the state of England. In Italy the duke of Ferrara is suspected, and his brother, the cardinal Est, since his death notoriously known affected this way: for since his decease, his secretary, who was an abbot, a Venetian born, being convicted of heresy, (so they term it,) and other offences, was burnt at Rome. Before his death he bewrayed all his master the cardinal's actions under him with England, and his advices, what had passed in the synod of the cardinals, and the pope's consistory, from time to time, touching the estate; and all by the lord prior sir Richard Shelly's means at Venice. I knew the abbot myself very well; indeed great was his privy with my said lord prior.

The old duke of Florence, that dead is, was certainly thought a friend to England; nay, and partly suspected in his religion. Cardinal Cezeo was likewise supposed to have inclined this way. In effect all the estates of Italy, (Naples

and Lombardy excepted,) by reason they all hate the Spaniard extremely, may with reason be supposed our friends. Though otherwise perchance, in respect of the religion here professed, they would not pass one jot, what subversion might befall us. They esteem it their safety and advantage against the Spaniards, our holding him play; while in the mean time their good-will is no less. But these that I have already named have been particularly discovered to bear the state of England great good-will.

ANNO
1596.

Number CCV.

The archbishop of York to the lord treasurer, to appoint speedily a president and lieutenant for the north parts.

My honourable good lord,

ALBEIT I know very well that your lordship is as full fraught with the affairs of this kingdom as ever you were, yet I beseech you, give me leave, in discharge of my duty, to add somewhat thereto of the many wants in this country. First, In Westmerland, Cumberland, Northumberland, the bishopric of Durham, the places are little acquainted with training of soldiers. Secondly, In the county of York, though there have been some training to no great purpose; yet when the numbers shall be renewed, I fear they will be found much defective, both the horsemen and footmen. Thirdly, This country lieth to be invaded by reason of the many good ports and creeks, and few or no forts to withstand the enemy. As, Humber, the Spurne, Flambrugh, Birlinton, Filay, Scarbrough, Robin Hood's Bay, Stooton, Hartlepool, &c. Fourthly, As your lordship knoweth, there is neither lieutenant, nor any that have authority to deal in martial affairs, if any dangers should happen. Of these things I beseech your lordship take consideration as your leisure will serve.

For myself, though I am very willing to take any pains in her majesty's service, yet for the weal and good of this part of her majesty's kingdom, I think it as needful to have 283

ANNO
1596.

a nobleman lord president and lord lieutenant, as it were at any time in her majesty's reign. Thus beseeching God to bless your counsels, to the honour and safety of the queen's most excellent majesty and her kingdoms, I bid your good lordship most heartily farewell. From York, the 24th of April, 1596.

Your lordship's in Christ most assured,
Matth. Ebor.

Number CCVI.

The archbishop of York and the council there to the lord treasurer: their reason why they stopped all suits commenced in chancery by those within their jurisdiction.

May it please your good lordship,

WE have received letters from our very good lord, the lord keeper, whereby his lordship signifieth a dislike that this council should direct process for the stay of any suits, commenced in the chancery for such matters wherein the plaintiff may have justice here. For answer whereof we have now written to his lordship, that in such cases where both parties dwell within this her majesty's commission, it hath been used by this court from the erection thereof to inhibit the plaintiff from promoting his suit in the chancery, or else to appear and shew cause why he should not, and to exhibit his complaint here. So that he is not simply inhibited, but conditionally. For upon a reasonable cause, as that the matter is for stay of a suit at the common law, or the plaintiff inhabiting without this commission, or such other matters shewed, as this court determineth not, the plaintiff is left at liberty to prosecute in the chancery. Which proceeding by this council hath been observed for the subjects' ease in these parts: for whose relief we have causes of equity determined near home.

Among other things, that commission was ordained because contentious persons do often enforce their adversation to a hard composition, rather for the avoiding of a tedious and chargeable journey, than by the goodness of their

cause. Which course between the chancery and this council hath been well allowed of by his lordship's predecessors. ANNO
1596.
And a great number of precedents to be shewed thereof: whereby there hath been a good correspondence between them in the execution of justice; praying the like of his lordship.

Now may it please your good lordship, we having no lord president in these parts, who was wont (being a peer of the realm) to countenance the jurisdiction of this court, in respect of your lordship's long experience in the state, and favour to this commission, are bold to pray your lordship's favourable assistance as touching the premises, being 284
a matter so greatly importing the commission, and tending as it were to an innovation in matters of justice among the subjects of these parts, who ever sithence the erecting of this court have usually been eased here by the aforesaid means, if they were sued in the chancery by any dwelling within this commission, and had their causes determined here with expedition and small charge. Which course was so well allowed often in the times of that honourable counsellor, sir Nicolas Bacon, and of sir Thomas Bromley, that without contradiction, if the defenders had not prayed the help of this court, but alleged demurrer, that both the parties were resiant within this commission, his plea was allowed.

Wherefore we do citsoons humbly pray your good lordship, that you would move the lord keeper to give the like allowance to our proceedings, that other his predecessors have willingly done to the ease of poor subjects. And so beseeching God to bless your lordship with his manifold gifts, we humbly take our leaves. At York, the 8th of June.

Matth. Ebor

E. Stanhope. Ch. Hales. Jo. Gibson.

ANNO
1596.

Number CCVII.

— *A proclamation against such as took upon them to be messengers, entitled,*

A proclamation against sundry abuses practised by divers lewd and audacious persons falsely naming themselves messengers of her majesty's chamber; travelling from place to place, with writings counterfeited in form of warrants: as also, against another sort of vagabond persons, that carry counterfeit passports, wherewith to beg and gather alms.

THAT her majesty being given to understand of certain most notable and lewd practices, put in ure by divers dissolute and audacious persons, to the great slander of her majesty's service, and abuse, charge, and hinderance of her majesty's loving subjects; which deceitful persons falsely taking upon them to be messengers of her chamber; and for that purpose undutifully wearing boxes, or escutcheons of arms, as the messengers do; being associated with others of like bad disposition; have, and still do go up and down the country, with writings in form of warrants, whereunto the names of the lords and others of her majesty's privy-council, and other ecclesiastical commissioners, are by them counterfeited: by colour wherof they do warn gentlemen, ministers of the church, women, yeomen, and others, that dwell in sundry counties of the realm, to appear before the
285 lords and others of her majesty's privy-council, and exact fees of them for their labour and travail, as though they had been expressly sent from the court to those whose names are inserted in such counterfeit warrants. By which slanderous practice divers gentlemen, and other honest persons, are not only defrauded of the money by this fraudulent means extorted from them, but, to their great charge and hinderance, do repair from countries far distant unto the court, supposing they were sent for. Notwithstanding divers of these shameless counterfeit persons (by such means as the lords had used) had been apprehended, and brought into the star-chamber, whereby divers of them

had been condemned, and set on the pillory, lost their ears, and some marked in the face for their notable abuses; yet such is their audacious, wicked disposition, that they continued more and more this practice, to the notorious abuse of the lords, and great hinderance and charges of the queen's subjects.

ANNO
1596.

For reformation of these foul abuses, her majesty's pleasure was, that all justices of peace, and other public officers, should do their best endeavour, upon any notice or just suspicion given them, to apprehend these impostors, and see them safely sent up to the lords of her majesty's privy-council. And because these persons did practise this abuse especially to make dishonest gain of the same, the queen's pleasure was, that from henceforth no messenger of her chamber, groom, or other person, naming himself *pursuivant*, shall exact or take any fees of any person that shall be sent for to appear before the lords, until they have made their appearance at the court before them; neither shall the party warned give and make any allowance or other consideration unto the messenger, until upon his appearance order be taken for the same. The party required to appear is also to come up in the company of the messenger; and to be presented by him to the said lords, or to the clerk of the council attending. And if the messenger shall refuse to come in his company, pretending any further cause or excuse, the party warned may forbear his appearance. And if there be many named in one warrant, their appearance shall be on a certain day, when the messengers shall be there also. If the party warned shall have any suspicion of the messenger, or the warrant to be counterfeit, in that case he may cause the constable of the parish where he dwelleth, or the next public officer, to bring the supposed messenger before the next justice of peace; where the same may be viewed, and the party thoroughly examined. And if he shall find apparent cause of suspicion, to detain him in some prison, until the warrant be sent up to the privy-council, and the truth discovered; or else he shall send the party under safe custody to the court.

ANNO
1596.

And where also these base and shameless kind of people, the better to cover their lewd dealing, and abuse her majesty's subjects, do often compound with the parties whose names are inserted in the counterfeit warrants, and to dispense with them for a sum of money, and to make their appearance before the said lords, whereunto the parties warned, to avoid expenses to come up to the court; or further cause of trouble, do often yield; the queen therefore did straitly charge and enjoin all and every person, served 286 with any warrant, requiring their appearance before her privy-council, not to offer to yield to any such agreement with any messenger, groom of the chamber, or pursuivant, to be forborne for his said appearance, upon pain of imprisonment, and her majesty's further displeasure; and all messengers charged and forbidden to take any composition, upon pain to lose their places, and to be imprisoned, and severely punished for their misbehaviour.

Number CCVIII.

To the lord treasurer.

Captain Price's account of the expedition of Cales, anno 1596: concerning the taking of it, and damages done the Spaniards. Writ in June, 1596.

It may please your honourable lordship,

THE 20th of this month, being Sunday, we came very early in the morning before Cales: many of our men were put into small boats for to land; but the sea was so very tempestuous and rough, and dangerous, that we could not land. That night little was done: but we played with our great ordnance upon the ships which we found at anchor in the bay of Cales. The 21st day, about six of the clock in the morning, we began to skirmish with them by sea very hotly, until about three of the clock in the afternoon. We sunk the Great Philip, which was their admiral, and two other principal ships, that they did set on fire themselves. The rest of the ships, which for the most part were rent

with our great ordnance, they fled, and went to Port Rial; where they could not escape from us by no means. Then we entered in the island of Cales with our footmen, about four of the clock in the afternoon of the same day, where were many horsemen and footmen, ready to keep us from landing. We put them all to flight. We did, after our first landing, gain a sconce; fronting into the sea.

ANNO
1595.

Then there was certain of our companies sent to win a bridge about eight miles within the island. And the lords generals marched to Cales, with a very few number of men at the first: and by God's goodness we wan Cales before some of our soldiers landed from shipboard. We were possessed of the strong and rich city of Cales by eight of the clock at night of the same day.

Sir John Wyngfield was killed with a bullet on the head after we had possessed the town. At that time were sundry others slain out of the castle. That night we kept a strong watch. Many of our soldiers did disorder themselves by drinking of much wine in this hot country.

The 22d day they yielded the castle. And once they offered two millions of treasure for their ransom and formal freedom, and for saving of their lives. But the duke of Medina, which dwelleth about eighteen miles from Cales, when he did understand of the offer made unto us, he caused all their ships to be burnt that lay at Cales, at the Port Rial. There was of their ships burnt and made away about fifty-seven ships and two galleys: which were already laden very richly for the Indies. Their wealth that was burnt in them was reckoned by the Spaniards to be worth about three millions of treasure.

The 3d day the women and poorer sort of men were conveyed out of Cales, with their bag and baggages; and the dead bodies were buried; and the streets cleansed, for fear of infection: for the country is very hot.

The 24th day, they of St. Mary Port, and they from Port Rial, and from sundry other places, [moved] for a truce and composition.

The sixth day an ambassador, and the general of the Spa-

ANNO
1596.

nish galleys, did likewise come unto our generals for to have a composition.

Thus being bold to trouble your honour, with all humble duty I shall continually pray to God, even from the very depth of my heart, to send your lordship good health: that your days may be prolonged, to the great comfort of all your friends. From Cales, the 28th of June, 1596.

Your lordship's ever most humble,
bounden to command for ever,

H. Price.

God preserve her majesty, and confound her enemies.

Number CCIX.

This letter was enclosed in another from Anthony Ashley to the said lord. And his was to this tenor.

Right honourable,

THERE were killed and hurt of our men about two hundred: of the enemy were killed not very many to speak of. Myself received some brushes with stones cast down from the walls, at our first entry, which was then but very few men and number of us: God make us all thankful to him: he did mightily defend us, otherwise we had been all slain that entered first into the forts of the town walls. Your lordship's letter is within this enclosed. Jesus preserve your good lordship, and all yours, with all your heart's desire.

The 27th of June our generals made fifty-five knights, whereof Mr. Ashley, clerk of the council of war, was one. He was to register all the counsels taken, and to record their actions and enterprises.

Number CCX.

288

Sir Anthony Ashley, secretary to this expedition, and commissioner to the lord Burghley: concerning the action at

Cules, in a relation drawn up by him of the action, by his lordship's order. ANNO
1596.

Right honourable,

THIS, I think, with your lordship's grave penul and amendment, may serve for the present, till the next come forth. Wherein I have observed (upon my faith and poor credit) nothing so much as the truth; which, as I take it, is the true life and scope of your honourable intent, to the better satisfaction of the world, &c.

I must confess myself ambitious to affect to be remembered herein, and warranted at least with the truth, though not with modesty nor comeliness, if it should pass the press with any name thereto; which is needless. It may be also, that the relation will be thought too particular. All I refer to your lordship's censure.—I most humbly take leave, this 8th of August, 1596.

Your honourable good lordship's poor follower
and true affected,

A. Ashley.

Number CCXI.

D. Pye's information of popery in Sussex, ann. 1596.

SINCE the lord Mountague's coming to live at Battel, religion in that country, and especially in that town, is greatly decayed. Dr. Withens, dean of Battel, where the lady Mountague lives, is suspected to be very backward in religion: for this two years and more he neither ministereth the communion nor receiveth it; but commonly, if there be a communion, he getteth some other to do it. And either getteth some other to do it, and getteth himself out of the town, or keepeth house. His wife cometh scarce twice a year to church. He keepeth company with recusants, especially Dr. Gray, a priest, whom sir Francis Walsingham committed, and about a year ago confined; and now liveth in my lady's house, being suspected to do much harm, both with the dean, and other thereabouts.

ANNO
1595.

Of late he hath found out a holy well in Battel park, whither many, especially women, resort, like a young pilgrimage, and call it Dr. Gray's well. I have heard that there hath been about a score there at even prayer time on 289 a Sunday. The dean also consorteth with Terry, that was a schoolmaster in Battel, and had the bringing up of most of the gentlemen in that country. He also was committed, as I remember, by sir Francis Walsingham, and hath continued in prison till Lent last, and then came to Battel, where he now dwelleth a recusant; and is supposed to do much harm. These two and the dean are great companions.

The jurisdiction of the place is in the dean, wholly exempt from civil jurisdiction, and is altogether neglected by him; so that they do what they list. Many in the town that never received the communion, and come very seldom to church.

At the outside of Battel park dwelleth Mr. Edm. Pelham, the chiefest justice of peace in that reape, and ruleth most; who is very backward in religion. Himself cometh to church but slackly: hath not this twelvemonth or more received the communion. His wife a professed recusant; but since the last parliament she hath been at church, and now useth it twice or thrice a year, but never receiveth the communion. He hath two daughters married, that never received the communion, and come to church as the mother doth. He is chief of my lord Mountague's council, and a great man with the dean of Battel. There are many recusants frequent his house. A little before the siege of Calis, and at the same, one Mr. Dorel, of Scothey, a notorious recusant, lay there, hovering about toward the sea-coast; and at the point that our men were to be shipped from Rye and Dover to Calis, a servant of the said Mr. Dorel, mounted upon a gelding worth twenty marks, and well appointed, having a case of pistols, rid there to Sussex, and a great part of the wild of Kent, with an alarm that the Spaniards were landed at three places in Sussex: had burnt Borne and Pemsey, &c. And could not be stayed, but left his cloak in a constable's hand; and being pursued,

ANNO
1596.

forsook his horse, and ran two miles on foot, till he was taken and brought to Rye, to the said Mr. Pelham, and other justices, who rebuked him, and committed him to the Town-house a few hours, though many gentlemen there were of opinion that he should be sent to the lords. Upon that false alarm there was the greatest hurlyburly, woful outcries of the people, &c. that ever was in any memory; the soldiers at Rye ready to march out of the town towards Borne, and the service greatly hindered by that means. At the same time my lady Mountague's people, seeing the town of Battel in that uproar and miserable state, rejoiced, and shewed signs of joy; insomuch that the people fell into great exclamation and cursings of them openly in the streets.

When news was brought that Calis was won, they gave out these speeches, God be thank it, we shall have better neighbours.

A little before the siege of Calis, there was apprehended at Battel a well aged man, who confessed that he was servant of Mr. Dacres, brother to the lady Mountague; that he then came from his said master with letters and messages to——. When Calis was taken, there was much speech in Battel (his master's daughter being then with the said lady) of the great services did in the taking of it [by the Spaniards]. The constable threatened to send him away, unless he could find sureties; whereupon he sent into my lord's house, and some of her gentlemen became sureties for him. The next 290 day Mr. Hen. Apsley came to the town, the constable desired him to examine the man: he pretended haste then, and desired him to carry him to Mr. Edm. Pelham. Next morning Mr. Pelham came to the town, took the man from the officer, thanked the constable for his good service, and said he would send him up to the lord treasurer. But is doubted by the constable and other honest men that it was not so done; but only given out, to stop their further complaints.

ANNO
1596.

Number CCXII.

Vagabonds and rogues in Somersetshire increase: and why; signified in a letter to the lord treasurer, from Edw. Heat, some eminent justice of peace in that county.

The calendar of the assizes in that county, an. 1596.

IN Lent assizes were 134 prisoners criminals: whereof nine executed, fourteen burnt in the hand. Fifteen felons, but whipped, for that in favour they were found petty larceny. Divers reprieved, and sent back to the gaol: others sent back to the gaol, to be tried at the sessions. Nineteen found guilty of several felonies by the grand jury, but acquitted by the petty jury. Forty-seven committed for felony, and indictments preferred against them by the grand jury: but *ignoramus* found of them all; and so they were acquitted.

Of this calendar ninety-seven set at liberty; all for the most part desperate and wicked persons, and must of necessity live upon spoil.

The calendar of the summer assizes. Of this assizes sixty-seven delivered: most part of which must of force live upon spoil of the country.

Calendar of Ilchester sessions. Twenty-four soldiers committed: abroad again. Eight malefactors executed.

Calendar of Wells sessions. Four executed.

In all, executed this year, 1596, forty. So it appeareth, that besides those that be executed, and those that be burnt in the hand, 35. Whipped for felony, 37. Felonies acquitted by the grand jury, 67. Felonies acquitted by the petty jury, 45. That be cast men, and reprieved to the gaol, there are set at liberty this year of men committed, or bound over for felonies, 183. The greatest part whereof must of necessity live by spoil.

Number CCXIII.

ANNO

1596.

*With the calendar as above, Mr. Heat sent this letter to
the lord treasurer at the same time.*

291

Rt. honourable, my very good lord,

HAVING long observed the rapines and thefts committed within this county, where I serve, and finding they multiply daily, to the impoverishing of the poor husbandman, that beareth the greatest burden of all services, and knowing your most honourable care of the preservation of the peace of this land, do think it my bounden duty to present unto your honourable and grave consideration these calendars enclosed, of the prisoners executed and delivered this year past, in this county of Somerset: wherein your lordship may behold 183 most wicked and desperate persons to be enlarged: and of these very few came to any good; for none will receive them into service. And, in truth, work they will not; neither can they, without most extreme pains, by reason their sinews are so benumbed and stiff through idleness, as their limbs being put to any hard labour, will grieve them above measure: so as they will rather hazard their lives than work. And this I know to be true: for at such time as our houses of correction were up, (which are put down in most parts of England, the more pity,) I sent divers wandering suspicious persons to the house of correction; and all in general would beseech me with bitter tears to send them rather to the gaol. And denying it them, some confessed felony unto me, by which they hazarded their lives, to the end they would not be sent to the house of correction, where they should be forced to work.

But, my good lord, these are not all the thieves and robbers that are abroad in this county. For I know it, in the experience of my service here, that the fifth person that committeth a felony is not brought to this trial: for they are grown so exceeding cunning, by their often being in the gaol, as the most part are never taken. If they be, and come into the hands of the simple man that hath lost his goods,

ANNO

1596.

he is many times content to take his goods, and let them slip; because they will not be bound to give evidence at the assizes, to his trouble and charge. Others are delivered to simple constables and tithingmen, that sometimes wilfully, and other times negligently, suffer them to escape. Others are brought before some justice, that either wanteth experience to examine a cunning thief, or will not take the pains that ought to be taken, in sifting him upon every circumstance and presumption; and that done, see that the party robbed give full evidence. And if he find an *ignoramus* found by the grand jury, and know by the examination he hath taken that it is in default of good evidence, then he ought to inform the judge, that the party robbed may be called, and enjoined by the court to frame a new bill and give better evidence. And then ought the justice to be present at the trial of the prisoner, that he may inform both

292 judge and jury what he found by examination; and likewise see that the party robbed give true evidence to the petty jury that he can: in which default of justice many wicked thieves escape. For most commonly the most simple country man and woman, looking no further than to the loss of their own goods, are of opinion, that they would not procure any man's death for all the goods in the world. Others, upon promise to have their goods again, will give faint evidence, if they be not strictly looked into by justice.

And these that thus escape infect great numbers, emboldening them by their escapes. Some having their books by entreaty of the justices themselves, that cannot read a word. Others, having been burnt in the hand more times than one; for after a month or two there will be no sign in the world: and they will change both name and habit, and commonly go into other shires, so as no man shall know them. And the greatest part are now grown to these petty felonies, for which they may have their book: by which they are emboldened to this great wickedness. And happy were it for England, if clergy were taken away in case of felony.

For God is my witness, I do with grief protest in the

duty of a subject, I do not see how it is possible for the poor countryman to bear the burdens duly laid upon him, and the rapines of the infinite numbers of the wicked, wandering, idle people of the land: so as men are driven to watch their sheepfolds, their pastures, their woods, their corn fields: all things growing too, too common.

Others there be, and, I fear me, emboldened by the wandering people, that stick not to say boldly, *they must not starve, they will not starve*. And this year there assembled sixty in a company, and took a whole cart-load of cheese from one driving it to a fair, and dispersed it among them: for which some of them have endured long imprisonment and fine, by the judgment of the good lord chief justice, at our last Christmas sessions. Which may grow dangerous by the aid of such numbers as are abroad, especially in these times of dearth: who no doubt animate them to all contempt both of noblemen and gentlemen, continually buzzing into their ears, that the rich men have gotten all into their hands, and will starve the poor.

And I may justly say, that the infinite numbers of the idle wandering people, and robbers of the land, are the chiefest cause of the dearth: for though they labour not, and yet spend double as much as the labourer doth. For they live idly in the alehouses, day and night eating and drinking excessively.

And within this three months I took a thief, that was executed this last assizes, that confessed unto me, that he and two more lay in an alehouse three weeks: in which time they eat twenty fat sheep: whereof they stole every night one. Besides, they brake many a poor man's plough, by stealing an ox or two from him: and not being able to buy more, leaseth a great part of his tillage that year.

Others leese their sheep out of their folds; by which their grounds are not so fruitful as otherwise they would be. And such numbers being grown to this idle and thievish life, there are scant sufficient to do the ordinary tillage of the land. For I know, that some having their husbandmen sent for soldiers, they have lost a great part of their tillage 293

ANNO that year: and others are not to be gotten, by reason so
 1596. many are abroad, practising all kind of villainy.

And when these lewd people are committed to the gaol, the poor country that is robbed by them are forced there to feed them, which they grieve at: and this year there hath been disbursed to the relief of the prisoners in the gaol 73*l*. and yet they allowed but 6*d*. a man weekly. And if they were not delivered at every quarter sessions, so much more would not serve, nor two such gaols would hold them. But if this money might be employed to build some houses adjoining to the gaol for them to work in, and every prisoner committed for any cause, and not able to relieve himself, compelled to work; and as many of them as are delivered upon their trials, either by acquittal of the grand jury or petty jury, burning in the hand, or whipping, presently transferred thence to the houses of correction, to be kept in work, except some present will take any into service; I dare presume to say, the tenth felony will not be committed that now is. And if some like course might be taken with the wandering people, they would easily be brought to their places of abode; and being abroad, they all in general are receivers of all stolen things that are portable.

As namely, the tinker in his budget, the pedlar in his hamper, the glassman in his basket, and the lewd proctors, which carry the broad seal and green seal in their bags, cover infinite numbers of felonies: in such sort that the tenth felony cometh not to light; for he hath his receiver at hand, in every alehouse, in every bush. And these last rabble are very nurseries of rogues.

And of wandering soldiers, there are more abroad than ever were, notwithstanding her majesty's most gracious proclamation lately set forth for the suppressing of them; which hath not done that good it would, if it had been used as it ought. For the justices in every shire ought to have assembled themselves upon it, and upon due consideration had of her majesty's pleasure therein, acquainted all inferior officers with it; and so taken some strict course for the apprehending of them: but the proclamations being sent to

the sheriffs, they deliver them over to the bailiffs to be proclaimed. There a few ignorant persons hear a thing read, which they have little to do with, and less regard: and the tenth knoweth not yet that ever there was any such proclamation.

ANNO
1556.

Your lordship may perceive by this counterfeit pass that I send you enclosed, that the lewd young men of England are devoted to this wicked course of life: for the man that travelled by colour of it is inheritor to 40*l*. land, after his father; and his name is Limerick. His father a gentleman, and dwelleth at Northlache, in the county of Gloucester. I kept him in prison two months, and examined him often, and yet still confirmed the truth of his passport with most execrable oaths. Whereupon I sent into Cornwall, where he said his mother dwelt: and by that means discovering him, he confessed all. By which your lordship may see, it is most hard to discover any by examination, all being resolved never to confess any thing, assuring themselves that none will send two or three hundred miles to discover them for a whipping matter, which they regard nothing: for all that were whipped here, upon my apprehension, are all abroad.

And otherwise will it never be without a more severe 294 course, that liberty of their wicked life is so sweet unto them. I may justly say, that the able men that are abroad, seeking the spoil and confusion of the land, are able, if they were reduced to good subjection, to give the greatest enemy her majesty hath a strong battle, and (as they are now) are so much strength to the enemy. Besides, the generation that daily springeth from them is like to be most wicked.

The corn that is wastefully spent and consumed in ale-houses by the lewd wandering people will find the greatest part of the poor; for it is most certain, that if they light upon an alehouse that hath strong ale, they will not depart until they have drunk him dry. And it falleth out by experience, that the alehouses of this land consume the greatest part of the barley: for upon a survey taken of the alehouses only of the town of Wells, leaving out the taverns and inns, it appeareth by their own confessions, that they

ANNO

1596.

spent this last year 12,000 bushels of barley malt; which would have afforded to every market in this shire 10 bushels weekly, and would have satisfied a great part of the poor. A great part whereof is consumed by these wandering people: who being reduced to conformity, corn, no doubt, will be much more plentiful.

By this your good lordship may inform yourself of the state of the whole realm, which, I fear me, is in as ill case, or worse than ours: for we are wonderfully aided by the best lord chief justice that ever was, and the good baron Mr. Evans, and our justice of assize, very reverend good men, and most careful in their calling.

But the greatest fault is in the inferior ministers of justice, which should use more earnest endeavour to bring them to the seat of judgment and justice: wherein if every justice of peace in England did, in every of their divisions, quarterly meet; and before their meeting cause a diligent search to be made for the apprehending of all rogues and vagabonds and suspicious persons, and to bring them before them, where they should receive the judgment of the law; and the sturdiest of them (that are most dangerous) committed to the house of correction or gaol; and at this meeting, inquiry of the defaults of alehouses which harbour them, of constables, tithingmen that suffer them to wander, and of inhabitants that relieve them contrary to the law; and inflict punishment according to the statute; a rogue could hardly escape.

Egyptians.

Experience teacheth, that the execution of that godly law upon that wicked sect of rogues, the Egyptians, [Gypsies,] had clean cut them off; but they seeing the liberties of others, do begin to spring up again: and there are in this country of them, but upon the peril of their lives. I avow it, they were never so dangerous as the *wandering soldiers*, or other stout rogues of England: for they went visibly in one company, and were not above thirty or forty of them in a shire. But of this sort of wandering idle people, there are three or four hundred in a shire: and though they go by two or three

in a company, yet all or the most part of a shire do meet, either at fairs or markets, or in some alehouse, once a week. ANNO
1596.

And in a great hayhouse, in a remote place, there did resort weekly forty, sometimes sixty: where they did roast all kind of good meat. The inhabitants being wonderfully grieved by their rapines, made complaint at our last Easter sessions, after my lord chief justice's departure: precepts were made to the tithings adjoining for the apprehending of them. They made answer, they were so strong that they durst not adventure of them: whereupon precepts were made to the constables of the shire; but not apprehended, for they have intelligence of all things intended against them. For there be of them that will be present at every assize, sessions, and assembly of justices, and will so clothe themselves for that time, as any should deem him to be an honest husbandman: so as nothing is spoken, done, or intended to be done, but they know it. I know this to be true, by the confession of some. 295

And they grow the more dangerous in that they find they have bred that fear in justices, and other inferior officers, that no man dares call them into question. And at a late sessions a tall man, a man sturdy and ancient traveller was committed by a justice, and brought to the sessions, and had judgment to be whipped, he, present at the bar, in the face and hearing of the whole bench, swore a great oath, that if he were whipped, it should be the dearest whipping to some that ever was. It strake such a fear in him that committed him, as he prayed he might be deferred until the assizes; where he was delivered without any whipping or other harm, and the justice glad he had so pacified his wrath. And they laugh in themselves at the lenity of the law, and the timorousness of the executioners of it.

Calendars.

And if it please your honour, for the good of your country, to command a view of the calendars of all the gaols in England, you shall behold a lamentable state, whereby your good lordship may inform yourself, and receive nothing from me: which I humbly crave, fearing lest it

ANNO should be conceived amiss by some. But knowing the
 1496. danger that may grow by these wicked people to my dread
 and most dear sovereign's most peaceable government, I
 will not leave it unadvertised, though I should hazard my
 life by it: and so most humbly crave pardon for this my
 boldness, with your honourable acceptance of my most
 bounden duty and love.—From my poor house at Nether-
 ham in Somersetshire, this 25th of September.

Your good lordship's in all humbleness,
 to be commanded,

Edw. Hext.

296

Number CCXIV.

The false certificate before mentioned.

TO all and singular the justices of the peace, mayors, &c.
 know, that I Tho. Scroope, knt. lord Scroope of Bolton, lord
 warden of the middle marshes of England, and captain of
 her majesty's city of Carlisle—

That this bearer, John Manering, lately arrived from
 Scotland, and came before me, bringing just proof, by his
 conduct, from the lord warden of Scotland, of the cause of
 his arrival in England and country: these are therefore to
 certify of the truth, that the said John, with other of his
 company, through tempest of foul weather, were driven
 ashore upon the north parts of Scotland, whereby they
 were by the northland, called the Scottish Irish, robbed, and
 spoiled of their bark, and all therein. Wherein the said
 John lost of his own part the value of threescore pounds
 and better, and being grievously wounded in the thigh with
 a dart, and in the arm with an arrow, upon the grappling
 of the ship: these are therefore, upon consideration of this
 his loss, his hurt, and great necessity, to request you to
 permit him to pass unto Wormyl in Cornwall, to his mother
 and other his friends there; and in her majesty's name re-
 quire you to relieve him.—Signed with the name and seal
 of lord Scroope; and in the names of the earl of Cumber-

land, Rich. Louthur, and divers other justices in Westmerland, York, Stafford, Worcester, Gloucester; and so as far as Somerset: when this gentleman and justice, Mr. Hext, found out the cheat, and sent his pass to the lord treasurer, enclosed in his letter to him.

ANNO
1596.

Number CCXV.

Sir John Smyth, committed to the Tower of London, for words spoken by him to the militia that were training near Colchester under sir Thomas Lucas: which Smyth was cousin-german to king Edward VI. by the lady Jane Seimour's sister, and had been sometime ambassador by the queen to the king of Spain; a man of Spanish comportment, and well known to that king. And before that, a volunteer with other English gentlemen in the wars of Hungary against the Turk.

BEING brought this year, 1596, into the star-chamber, he confessed that he came the 12th of June, 1596, with Mr. Seimour, the second son of the earl of Hertford, Mr. Brome, Mr. Tho. Manock, into a field called Windmill 297 Field, near Colchester, where the band of sir Tho. Lucas was trained, and presented himself before the pikemen, as they stood there in rank, and rid about the companies of the pikemen, and termed Mr. Seimour of the blood royal, and moved them to go with him and Seimour, and he would be their captain. And the like to which he confessed, being in the Tower, in these words:

“ My masters, if you will go with me, you shall go with
“ a better man than myself or sir Tho. Lucas. Here is a
“ nobleman of the blood royal, brother to the lord Beau-
“ champ, that shall be your captain, and I myself will be
“ an assistant unto him. The common people have been
“ oppressed, and used as bondmen these thirty years: but
“ if you will go with me, I will see a reformation, and you
“ shall be used as freemen. All that will go with me, hold
“ up your hands, and follow me:” commanding twelve of

ANNO
1596.

the best archers to follow him; and that as many as would follow him, to march on.

To which confession he set his hand, *John Smith*: and underwritten, *Examined by us, Edward Cooke, Tho. Fleming, Fr. Bacon.*

These speeches he confessed he uttered, being heated the day before with too much eating and drinking in good company, which caused a wind in his stomach, and a distemperature in his head, as he wrote in a penitent letter from the Tower to the lord treasurer; to whom he bare a spite, and by those bold expressions to the soldiers intended as much. Which that lord well understood: as appeared by Smith's letter following.

Number CCXVI.

Part of a letter from sir John Smyth to the lord treasurer.

PRAYETH him to inform her majesty, that his disordered words at Colchester proceeded of nothing else but by distemperature of eating and drinking.

Whereas I understand, by Mr. Lieutenant of the Tower, that your lordship required him that I should signify unto your lordship, in respect of the most grievous and infamous words that I used of your lordship unto those soldiers, what treasons I could object against your lordship; I for answer do say, that I know not, but do very well know, that your lordship in the whole course of your counsellorship and managing of affairs under her majesty, from the beginning of her reign hitherto, hath performed them to the praise and honour of yourself and all yours, and to the benefit of her majesty and the commonwealth. And therefore do of myself very willingly offer myself to make satisfaction unto your lordship the last star-chamber day in this term, in public audience, by confessing great fault and misbehaviour committed to the offence of her majesty, and to the great wrong and undeserved injury of your lordship, through
298 the great fume, heat, and distemperature of drink and pas-

sion that was in me at that time: craving therefore most humbly pardon. And I do further offer, that if it may please your lordship to be a means unto her majesty, for a final punishment, to banish me out of all parts of the world and her realm to mine own house in the country, [Little Baddow in Essex,] never during my life to depart without her special licence, above one mile from thence,——or upon any severe punishment that shall be allotted unto me. And I will here set down in the Tower another satisfaction in writing, which your lordship shall see and consider of, for the uttermost restoring of your lordship to your honour by me, by my distemperature and passion, detracted and touched. And the same, being copied out in divers copies, I will send them the first market-day after my deliverance out of the Tower and banishment, by one of mine own men, to Colchester, there to be set up on divers posts and corners of the town, whereas they may be publicly read, In the conclusion, wishing your lordship again and again, and many times again, to set aside all kinds of heat towards me, and by Christian charity and heroical compassion to win me again to be one of your most affectionate and assured friends to my power.

ANNO
1598.

He had likewise desired in his letter to the lord treasurer that this punishment might suffice, and that he might suffer no pecuniary punishment in his wife's jointure, being all the estate in lands that was left: all this the good lord treasurer complied with. And he was confined to his own house, and the extent for his estate to the queen stayed: for which he writ another letter of thanks, dated, July, 1598, from his house and prison, as he called it, at Baddow.

Number CCXVII.

A letter of sir John Smyth to the lord treasurer, touching his submission in the star-chamber; the attorney-general, and Mr. Solicitor, and Mr. Bacon being sent unto him, Feb. 6, 1597.

Right honourable, and my very good lord,
 MY most humble duty to your lordship remembered.

ANNO
1596.

Your lordship may well consider and see by that which I have done, upon this message and advice of Mr. Attorney, Mr. Solicitor, and Mr. Bacon, the wonderful confidence and assurance that I have and do conceive of your lordship's great honour and worthiness, and of that which of all things is the chief, and all in all in princes, rulers, and magistrates in this world, that is, that your lordship doth love and fear God, with all charity. Which causeth all magistrates to have great respect to their honours and reputations among men. Without which conceit, by me conceived of your lordship's great virtue and worthiness, and great favour towards me, there is no advice nor authority that should
299 have moved me to have put my hand to any writing, knowing mine own conscience (as it is to others also) the poor and sinful state that I at that time stood in, I was instructed by those three learned men (of whom I have a great good opinion) of the course I should hold in the star-chamber in my speeches and behaviour; and that your lordship will not any way that I should make my satisfaction to your lordship there, for the great injuries that I in my distemperature did offer unto your lordship, nor that I should so much as name your lordship upon any occasion of these matters. Which although it seemed unto me strange, yet I have resolved to observe that course, with the rest of their instructions, and in very great sort to humble myself; most humbly beseeching your good lordship it may please you to remember me, that according to the promise in your lordship's name made unto me by those three learned men, of so great account, I may be called some day this term to the star-chamber; and that there my offence (in respect of my wife's and my great afflicted state) may receive some good end by the censure of that most honourable court, through your lordship's most noble and charitable dealing: and that I may have a whole day's warning at the least, before the star-chamber day, of the hearing of my matter.

In performance whereof, I assuredly believe your lordship shall not only greatly please Almighty God, who is the author and fountain of all wisdom, truth, and charity; but that your lordship shall also win great honour and reputa-

I am in the opinion of the world, whose eyes are greatly bent, and do expect how your lordship will deal with me, who have so greatly offended your lordship; beside the wonderful obligation that I shall continually stand bound to your lordship and all yours, during my life, as knoweth Almighty God; who send unto your lordship long life and health, with continual increase of honour. From the Tower, this 6th of February, 1597.

Your lordship's most humble and bound always to
do your lordship all honour and service,

Jo. Smythe.

Number CCXVIII.

His letter of gratitude to the lord treasurer; being now at liberty from the Tower. Dated from his house at Badow, under confinement there.

Rt. honourable, and my very good lord,

MY most humble duty to your lordship remembered. My wife and I do yield unto your lordship most humble thanks for the very great favour that your lordship shewed unto us, in staying the extent for our debt to the queen, that the last Lent was coming out against my wife's jointure and lands, that are in our present possession. Certainly, there is 300 no favour nor friendship, how great or small soever, that your lordship hath in mine imprisonment or shall hereafter at any time shew unto me, but that they are, and shall be, double and treble greater in mine account than they should have been before my frantic offences, when, (through mis-act and distemperature,) for my sins, I was not myself. However, there is no error nor offence once past that can be revoked again: and therefore I and all other, that have my fear of God or reputation in them, that have any ways transgressed, I think, make greater satisfaction to God, to themselves, and to the offended, to be sorry for their faults, and to make satisfaction by all the ways and means they possibly can. Which, by the grace of God, I will never be

ANNO 1598. ashamed or negligent to perform, although greatly ashamed of my frailties and transgressions committed.

And therefore, as there was no man in England that did more respect and honour your lordship than I did, until one of your lordship's own, by misinformation, and upon some second malicious meaning, brought me first to doubt, and afterwards greatly to dislike of your lordship; so now I having found the contrary by your lordship's most honourable dealing with her majesty for me in my great affliction in your friendship, may be assured that you have not found in England that will dispose himself to do more honour and service unto your lordship, than I to the uttermost of my power.

I have sent unto your lordship herewith a petition of mine; which if it may please your honour either to read, or cause to be read unto your lordship, and to dispose of the matter as your lordship shall think good, your lordship shall do me a very special favour. And if there be no occasion of employment for me, then I content myself as well with this my restraint, as if I had all England and Europe to travel in at my pleasure. From my poor house and prison, this 13th of July, 1598.

Number CCXIX.

Edward lord Crumwel, to the lord treasurer, lord Burghley: a protestation of his unfeigned love and service, by his futher's commandment, late deceased: who was Henry lord Crumwel.

My most honourable good lord,

AT my taking my leave of your lordship, finding that your lordship was not well, I feared to be any ways tedious or troublesome to your lordship, and therefore forbear to deliver that thankful acknowledgment whereunto your lordship hath bound me. I have notwithstanding made bold to present the same by these few lines, as a pledge of that everlasting, unfeigned love which I and mine do owe and will

perform to your lordship and yours: which I desire rather to witness by deeds than protestations. And as by my late father's last command it was enjoined me, after my prince, ANNO
1596. 301
to endeavour myself to the obedient service of your lordship, which to my power I will religiously observe; so being by him recommended and left to the good favour of your lordship, as of a second father, I desire only to patronise myself under your honourable love.

And therefore I humbly beseech your good lordship to accept and take in good part the continuance of my humble offer of the same: and in this so dangerous a time you would vouchsafe to protect me with your good favour, desiring nothing more than the good opinion of her majesty and yourself: which as I well hope your lordship will be pleased to afford the one, so by your good means the other may be continued. And if either in my absence, or else whensoever, as occasions are or shall be presented, I may be so happy as to be remembered in any thing wherein I may do her majesty service. And my endeavours and proceedings shall, God willing, be so answerable, as none shall more loyally serve her highness, nor more truly honour yourself. I shall ever think myself most happy in being any way obliged by your lordship: to whose good favour I will ever attribute any good that may betide me. All my endeavours shall be to deserve the good opinion and favour of her majesty and yourself. And so, humbly praying pardon to have thus much troubled your lordship, I take my leave. From Westminster, the 6th of Sept. 1596.

Your good lordship's most assured to do you service,
Ed. Crumwel.

Number CCXX.

Articles annexed to the commission for recusants. This was a second commission for their examination, that was issued out some years before to the justices of every shire: occasioned (as it seems) upon the holy league of the pope

ANNO
1596.

and king of Spain to invade the realm. These articles seem to be drawn up by the lord treasurer Burghley. They were printed, and thus entitled: Articles annexed to the commission, for a further instruction to the commissioners how to proceed in the execution thereof. Lord keeper Puckring's MSS.

FIRST, You, to whom the commission shall be brought, shall without delay notify to the rest of the commissioners that shall be in that country, or that may shortly repair thither, the receipt of the said commission, with some signification of the contents thereof, and shall require them to
302 meet at some convenient time and place, to consider of the contents thereof; and thereupon to accord upon sundry days and places in every quarter of the shire ordinarily to meet about the same: so as now at the beginning, the oftener they shall meet, the same shall be the better. And after the first meeting you may, according to the quantity of that shire, make some partitions among yourselves to execute the commission with more ease. And yet you shall every forty days, for this present year, assemble all together, to confer upon your several proceedings: so as you may once every quarter give knowledge to her majesty's council of your actions.

Item, You shall send to the bishop or ordinary of the diocese, and to his chancellor and his official, and to the archdeacon in the same, to certify you of all persons, with their dwelling-places, whom they shall know to have been presented to them as recusants, and that do so continue in their recusancy. And the said certificate you shall require from the *custos rotulorum*, or the clerk of the peace, and from the clerk of assize of that county, to know such as have been presented and indicted as recusants, as well women as men, and what process hath been sent forth against them. And likewise you shall, by any other means, inform yourselves of all such as within that county are commonly noted to be receivers and comforters of persons that are suspected to come from beyond seas, as seminaries, priests, Je-

suits, or fugitives. And after that you shall be duly informed by these or any other means of such persons to be suspected as principal offenders or accessaries, you shall receive to yourselves secretly the names of the same without any publication thereof, until you shall afterwards find probable and good cause to warn any of them to come before you, or otherwise to apprehend and examine them according to the contents of your commission.

Item, In your examination of any person by this commission, you shall not press any persons to answer to a question of their conscience or matters of religion, otherwise than to cause them answer, whether they do usually come to the church, and why they do not. And if you shall perceive that they are wilful recusants, then you shall examine them upon any matter concerning their allegiance to her majesty, and of their devotion to the pope or to the king of Spain; or upon their maintenance of any Jesuit, seminary priest, or other person, sent from Rome, or from any parts beyond seas, to dissuade any subject from their obedience to the queen's majesty. And to give you some particular instructions in what sort you may conceive convenient questions, whereupon to examine persons that are to be suspected to adhere to the pope or to the king of Spain, contrary to their duty of allegiance, you may observe the form of these questions hereafter following.

The questions ensuing to be answered by oath, by such as shall be verily suspected to have been moved to give assistance to the forces of the pope or king of Spain, when they shall happen to invade this realm; whereby such like seducers may be discovered.

Whether have you been moved by any, and by whom, 303 and when, and by what persuasion, to give aid or relief, or to adhere to the forces of the pope, or king of Spain, or other foreign forces, when they should happen to invade this realm for any cause whatsoever, or to forbear to join to take part with her majesty or her forces.

The questions following to be ministered without oath, to

ANNO
1596.

discover such as shall be suspected to be priests, seminaries, or fugitives, dangerous to the state.

Whether have you been at Rome, or Rhemes, or in Spain, at any time within these five years? When you returned last into this realm, and to what purpose? And where have you been ever since your coming from thence?

Be you a Jesuit or priest, made after the Romish order? Where and when were you so made priest, and by whom? Have you been at the seminaries or colleges for the English, Welsh, or Irish nation at Rome, Rhemes, or Spain, or elsewhere? How long were you in any of them? And when were you last sent from any of them, to the intent to come into England or Wales, or other her majesty's dominions; and to what end?

Item, Where by her majesty's late proclamation (whereof you shall take knowledge) it is ordered, that all manner of persons, of what degree soever they be, without any exception, spiritual or temporal, and so forth, shall make particular inquisition of all manner of persons that have been admitted or suffered to have resort, diet, lodging, &c. within the space of all years past, &c. if you shall be informed of any such person to have been so lodged or comforted, &c. as in the proclamation is at large expressed; in such case you shall require the party that is appointed to make such inquisition, to deliver the same his inquisition to you in writing; and thereupon you shall do your best to try out, if there have been any suspected person so lodged or comforted by the said party appointed to make the inquisition; and him you shall demand to be delivered to you, to be committed, and further used according to his deserts.

Item, Because the like commission is sent into all the shires of the realm, and like instructions annexed thereto, as these are, and that you may perceive be informed of some persons meet to be apprehended or examined, which are gone out of that shire into some other part, or do remain in places out of the jurisdiction of your commission, in such cases we require you to send secret knowledge thereof to the commissioners of the countries where you shall think

such suspected persons do remain; requiring them, in her majesty's name, to use all diligence by the apprehension of such, and, by such information as you shall give them, to examine the parties, and to proceed against them according to their commission.

ANNO
1596.

Item, You shall do well to make choice of some persons of honest behaviour, and loyal in religion, in every quarter of the quire, and especially in every port-town, market-town, or large great parish, and where the parsons or vicars are faithful and careful over their cures, to join them together, with charge to observe all such as refuse obstinately 304 to resort to the church. And such persons you shall call before you, and, without dealing with them for their recusancy, (for which they are to be otherwise by law punished,) you shall (as you shall in your discretion think meet respecting the quality of their persons) require them to answer to the two former questions, or to either of them; for that by their recusancy they do give cause of suspicion to be disloyal in their duties to the queen's majesty and the estate, or to favour the common enemies.

Number CCXXI.

Notes taken out of the new commission for spies, recusants, missionaries, and such like, about London or ten miles of it.

TO inquire of all persons who, since the 21st year of her majesty's reign, are come, or shall hereafter come into this realm, &c. of whom any direct proof or suspicion may be conceived, that they intend or purpose to practise or attempt any thing to the danger of her majesty, or of the state of this realm.

All persons of what degree soever, &c. that shall wilfully abstain to resort to the church to hear divine service, &c. and do secretly reside and continue in the city of London or suburbs thereof, or within ten miles of the same; and likewise of such persons which at any time heretofore have

ANNO
1596.

committed or hereafter shall commit any offence contrary to the laws and statutes of this realm, in falsifying or transporting of any coin or current money of this realm; and all abettors, aiders, counsellors, receivers, and maintainers of the several offenders aforesaid; any four of the commissioners, whereof, &c. may by their letters send for any such like suspicious person, and after examination bail him, or commit him, and send him with his examination to be tried according to the laws, before the justices of the several circuits, &c. or the chief justice, &c. Allowance to be made by four aforesaid, under their hands, for the charges of the bringing up or removing of any prisoners. The same to be paid in the exchequer, if it exceed 6*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* If it do, then *by the order of the council*, [so it stood in the first paper of notes: altered thus by the lord treasurer's own hand, *to certify the council to procure further warrant,*] and further authority to apprehend all such vagrant and idle persons, terming themselves soldiers, wandering within the limits aforesaid, and to punish them according to the laws and statutes, &c. To follow instructions and directions herein, as at any time they shall receive under the hand of any six of the council.—A commandment to all justices and officers to assist. *See the instructions above, in the Articles.*

305

Number CCXXII.

Anno 1597. *Hutton, archbishop of York, to the lord treasurer: for a pardon for Dawson, a priest, converted by the said archbishop. His converting also of Ri. Stapleton, constable, &c. Recusants in those northern parts.*

My honourable and very good lord,

I AM bold at this time to inform your lordship, what ill success I had in a suit for a pardon for Miles Dawson, seminary priest, whom I converted wholly the last summer from popery. Upon his coming to the church, receiving the holy communion, and taking the oath of supremacy, I

ANNO
1597.

and the council here, about Michaelmas last, joined in petition to her majesty for her gracious pardon, and commended the matter to one of the masters of requests, and writ also to Mr. Secretary to further it, if need were; which he willingly promised to do. In Michaelmas term nothing was done. And therefore in Hilary term, I, being put in mind that all was not done in that court for God's sake only, sent up twenty French crowns of mine own purse, as a small remembrance for a poor man's pardon; which was thankfully accepted of.

Some say, that Mr. Topeliff [whose business was to look after recusants] did hinder his pardon: who protesteth that he knoweth no cause to stay it. There is some fault somewhere. I know it is not in her majesty: of whom I will say, as the prophet David speaketh of God, *Hath queen Elizabeth forgotten to be gracious? And is her mercy come to an end for evermore? Absit.* The whole world knoweth the contrary. Your lordship may do well, in mine opinion, to move Mr. Secretary Cecil to deal often in these works of mercy. It will make him beloved of God and man.

May it please your lordship further to understand, that since the conversion of Ri. Stapleton and his wife, (who received the holy communion publicly in the minster of York, on Whitsunday last,) I have been dealing with Joseph Constable and his wife, and have brought him to hear divine service, and she, being great with child, promiseth to do the same with all dutifulness. In consideration whereof my humble suit is in their behalf, (because he is passing poor, and the prison very chargeable,) that he may be set at liberty upon good sureties, that they shall not only dutifully repair to hear divine service, but also appear before the council here, or the justices' assize, &c. This council are precise in this matter, because he is indicted and outlawed for receiving a seminary priest. And yet your lordship, in Lent past, sent a letter touching that matter, with a letter enclosed directed unto yourself and Mr. Attorney-general, shewing his opinion in that the indictment was er-

ANNO roneous in two or three points: and therefore the outlawry
 1597. void. So that I must earnestly pray your lordship, that, if
 it seem good, we may have some direction for his enlarge-
 ment upon bonds, as is aforesaid.

306 Thus, beseeching God to bless her majesty and the
 whole realm with your lordship's long life in good health,
 I bid you most heartily farewell. From York, the 27th of
 May, 1597.

Your lordship's in Christ most assured,

Matth. Ebor.

Number CCXXIII.

*Matthew, archbishop of York, and the rest of the council
 in the north, to the lord treasurer Burghley; informing
 of the execution of certain papists. The plague in the
 north.*

MAY it please your lordship to be advertised, that the
 assizes and general jail delivery for this county of York
 being ended here, there was executed the fourth of this
 month, [of July,] for high treason, one Fulthorp and Ab-
 bot; being reconciled to the pope, and condemned at a
 jail delivery holden by this council in November last.
 There was likewise now executed Auleby, a priest, made at
 Doway, and one Warcop, that received him: the same
 Warcop having also formerly received one Neal, a seminary
 priest; for the which being prisoner in the late earl of Hun-
 tington's time, escaped by breach of prison. The two last
 were condemned at these assizes. All of them persisted in
 their obstinacy. And at their being willed to pray for her
 majesty, they answered, God make her his servant. And
 being required to pray for her preservation against her ene-
 mies, they would not answer any thing.

Joseph Constable did openly at the bar, before the jus-
 tices of assize, confess his errors in religion, and his offence
 against her majesty and her laws; making his submission
 in very humble manner, and discovered what seminaries

have had resort unto him. He hath taken the oath of her majesty's supremacy before this council most willingly; and he promiseth to receive the sacrament, and to bring in his son. And it seems to me, the archbishop, that he is fully reclaimed from popery.

ANNO
1597.

The justices of assizes have adjourned the assizes and jail delivery for the county of Duresme and Northumberland, in regard of the great infection of the plague in those counties, especially in and about Duresme and Newcastle. For which respect likewise we have adjourned all causes depending before this council, between such parties as are inhabiting within those counties, until the sitting after Michaelmas: before which time we hope the sickness will stay. And so, beseeching God to bless your lordship with his manifold graces, we humbly take our leaves. At York, this 6th of July, 1597.

Signed by the archbishop, Ch. Hales, Jo. Ferne.

Number CCXXIV.

307

Sir Edward Coke, the queen's attorney-general, to the lord treasurer Burghley: concerning his examination of Gerard, a Jesuit.

Rt. honourable,

MY duty most humbly remembered. Yesterday, in examining Gerard, the Jesuit, I find him to deny such things as I know to be *perspicue vera*: and doubting him to be of that opinion that others of his profession had been, I charged him therewith; who discovered himself in such sort, as by this enclosed your lordship may perceive. Whereby what good may be expected by their examination it may easily be seen; and what desperate and damnable doctrine this is, that taketh away the use of an oath, that God hath appointed to be a mean to decide controversies, or rather to bring in a most horrible abuse thereof, by condemning the innocent and justifying the wicked, it manifestly appeareth. And because this strange opinion of these boy priests

ANNO 1597. and devilish good fathers might be the better testified, I thought it good to have Mr. Lieutenant, Mr. Solicitor, Mr. Ward, [clerk of the council,] and myself to testify it. And thus I most humbly take my leave. This 14th of May, 1597.

Your lordship's most humbly at commandment,

Edw. Coke.

Number CCXXV.

The examination of John Gerard, a Jesuit, before Coke, attorney-general, and others, May the 13th, 1597: concerning an oath. Enclosed in the letter above.

JOHN GERARD, the Jesuit, being told, that upon the arraignment of Southwel, the priest, of high treason, one of the witnesses being asked upon her oath by one of the judges in open court, whether Southwel was ever in Bellamy's house, said, that she had been persuaded by Southwel to affirm upon her oath, that she did not see Southwel in Bellamy's house, and to keep this secret in her own mind, *of intent to tell you*; whereas, in truth, she had seen him divers times in Bellamy's house. And Southwel being charged herewith, openly confessed the same; and sought to justify the same by the place out of Jeremiah, that a man ought to swear *in judicio, justitia, et veritate*. And this John Gerard being asked, what his judgment and opinion concerning Southwel's opinion abovesaid, said, that he
308 was of the same opinion; and seemed to justify the same by the example of our Saviour Christ, who said to his disciples, that you shall go to Jerusalem. *Ego autem non ascendam*: keeping this secret to himself, *of intent to tell them*. And also saith, that our Saviour Christ saith, that the Son of man did not know the day of judgment, keeping this secret to himself, *of intent to tell them*. For he said, that as he was the Son of man he knew it, and could not be ignorant of any thing. And further saith, that a witness being examined *juridice*, and of temporal things, not

concerning religion or catholics, cannot answer with such equivocation as is above said.

ANNO
1597.

And forasmuch as this opinion, and the defence thereof, seemed to be damnable and blasphemous, he was requested to set down his own opinion therein, lest he should be mistaken. But he denied the same; not because it is untrue, but because he would not publish it. Then being requested to subscribe the same, he denied the same also.

Richard Burkley.

Edw. Coke.

William Ward.

Tho. Fleming.

Number CCXXVI.

Adam Loftus, archbishop of Dublin, to the lord treasurer: concerning Mr. Rider's case: who had a mandamus for the deanery of that cathedral church of St. Patrick, being no member thereof.

It may please your lordship,

IMMEDIATELY after the receipt of your letters, signifying her majesty's pleasure and commandment in the behalf of Mr. Ryder to the deanery of St. Patrick's, I assembled my chapter, and made the same known unto them, whom I found humbly willing, according to her majesty's pleasure, to make election of him. But forasmuch as they made a scruple to elect him, until he were a member of themselves, which they allege to be done by them in discharge of their consciences, being sworn to the form of their foundation, I have, to remove that scruple, reserved a prebend now void, in my gift, for Mr. Ryder; which presently upon his arrival I will admit him unto: and have taken the hands of my chapter thereupon, to elect him; which I assure your lordship, upon my credit, (which I would not break with you for all the deaneries and bishoprics of Ireland,) shall be done within ten days next after his coming. Whereunto I find my said chapter the more willing, (although there be among themselves as many learned gra-

ANNO 1597. duates as belong to any one church that I know in England,) because they acknowledge your lordship to be a chief pillar for the upholding of their church.

And so, hoping that your lordship will rest well satisfied for this time with the proceedings aforesaid, I commend you with my prayers to God's blessing. From Dublin, 29th of November, 1597.

Your lordship's humble at commandment,
Ad. Dublin.

309 If this course before mentioned be not to your lordship's liking, then if it please your lordship to signify to me by the next post what you would otherwise have to be done therein, I will not fail to expedite and effect the same.

Number CCXXVII.

William, bishop of Coventry and Litchfield, to the lord treasurer: to suspend his opinion of him upon a false information, as if he were a maker or maintainer of incestuous marriages.

My humble duty premised,

I UNDERSTAND your lordship, upon some sinister information, hath conceived hardly of me, namely, for making or allowing of incestuous marriages, or some other like, as was pretended. I know your lordship to be wise; and therefore doubt not but you will suspend your judgment till you hear me speak, and defend my innocency that way, when your lordship will: and am contented to clear mine innocency openly, (if it may be so thought good,) in the presence of all the honourable of our house; so far off am I from any fear or mistrust of my cause. I was once or twice coming to do my service to your lordship in the parliament house: but I thought better to forbear, till I had satisfied your lordship by my letters touching those slanderous reports; but I am nevertheless ready to do you all

duty and service. And so I humbly take my leave. From my lodgings by Holborn Conduit, the 16th of November, ANNO
1597.
1597.

Your lordship's always to command,
W. Coven. and Lich.

Number CCXXVIII.

Rogers, suffragan bishop of Dover, and dean of Christ's-church, Canterbury, died in May this year, 1597. A letter of his (the year uncertain) written to Mr. Bois, a learned civilian: concerning the validity of his leases.

Sir,

I UNDERSTAND that you have oftentimes, and in any places, given it out, that I, as dean of Christ's-church, with the chapter there, cannot make any leases of further continuance than for my lifetime, by reason of my suffraganship. If this be your opinion and report, I doubt not but you have law and reason for it. And inasmuch as 310
I do hear that you are of council with us, the dean and chapter, I am bold to desire you to advertise me with as much speed as you may, upon what law and reasons this your opinion is grounded; that thereupon I may provide such remedy as by counsel I shall be advised.

The matter in respect of myself I weigh very little; but in respect of the church's estate, (which is maintained much by fines raised of leases,) and in respect of the fermours, which may be much prejudiced by not renewing their leases, I will endeavour to remedy of this inconvenience as much as I may, and as I shall see it needful. But I cannot learn, either of her majesty's attorney-general, either of Mr. Baron Flowerdew, (which both are of council with us,) that there is any thing in law, whereby I may not as lawfully, to all intents and purposes, make leases with the chapter, as any other dean. And sure I am, that the dean of Norwich, (which immediately preceded the present dean,) [i. e. Salisbury, bishop of Man,] being a suffragan, as I am, did in

ANNO

1597.

his time lease out all the lands appertaining to the dean and chapter there: which leases stand yet in good force. And yet have they been thrice sifted and called in question in the best courts of this land, and once in the parliament house, as the new dean tells me; saying withal, that he would gladly give a 1000 mark, if he could in law overthrow those leases against the bishop of Salisbury that now is, [Piers,] being heretofore dean of that church and bishop of Rochester together, did make leases, as dean, which stand in good force still; as the now dean of Salisbury, Dr. Bridges, telleth me.

Moreover, king Edward in his nonage, and queen Mary in her coverture, being invested in the duchy of Lancaster, the one as duke, the other as duchess thereof, made leases of land appertaining to that duchy; which are in law holden to be good: because neither the nonage of the one nor the coverture of the other was judged in law to be prejudicial to the corporation of the said duchy, in respect that it was a corporate thing. And so, by the like reason, my counsel here saith, that my being of a bishop cannot prejudice any act that I and the chapter shall do, because I do it not as a private person, but as one of that corporation. In the time also of king Edward VI. Mr. Hooper had two bishoprics together, viz. Gloucester and Worcester, which are more incompatible than a deanery and a suffraganship; yet he made leases pertaining to either of those bishoprics: which were as effectual as any lease of any other sole bishop. And I do persuade myself, that if I would enter into searching of records in that faculty, I should find many mo precedents of those which have had bishoprics and deaneries together, whose leases were never to this day called in question. And therefore till I hear from you, I shall think that you, in holding the contrary, are much deceived.

I could allege an old suffragan, dean of York; by whom the dean of that church came to be first called *lord dean*, because he was a bishop: whose leases of things appertaining to that deanery never yet came into question. Neither

did the foresaid leases of the foresaid bishop suffragan of ANNO
Norwich come in question in respect of his suifraganship, 1597.
but upon other points.

To conclude, I do not hold my deanery as other bi-311
shops hold benefices in *commendam*, but I hold it by mere
dotation from the queen, and am by her letters patents put
in possession thereof, as all other deans are. And for avoid-
ing all cavil, I am besides under the like letters dispensed
withal to hold it, either with or without my suffraganship,
notwithstanding any constitution or canon to the contrary:
which dispensation I take to be sufficient against all canons
and civil laws. Out of which the greatest question in this
matter doth arise, as I suppose.

But howsoever it be, let me, I pray you, have your rea-
sons to the contrary, and I shall thank you for them: but
much more would have thanked you, if you had at the first
imparted your opinion to me, as ordering the church's
estate, whereunto you are a counsellor, and not published
the same abroad, so much as I hear you have done, to the
impairing of my credit in that place, and much more to the
hinderance of the church's estate, in giving occasion thereby
for our fermers to be afraid to renew their leases at my
hands. Howbeit, I am persuaded you had no ill meaning
either towards me or the church in this report: neither have
I towards you in this my expostulation for the same; but
will be ready, in any thing I may, to stand you in stead, as
I hope you will be the like towards me. And so, after over-
long troubling of you, I end; committing you to the grace
of the Almighty. Sothewark, the 7th of December.

Your very loving friend,

Ri. Dover.

ANNO

1597.

Number CCXXIX.

Dr. Jegon, vice-chancellor of the university of Cambridge, and the rest of the heads, to the lord Burghley, their high chancellor: complaining of their privileges infringed by the town; that they shall be forced to seek relief extraordinary.

Right honourable,

OUR humble duty remembered. May it please you to give us leave to acquaint your honour with the hard courses that the mayor and townsmen of Cambridge hold with us. All matters of variance and grief betwixt both bodies have been referred, at the direction of the lord chief justice of England, to conference among ourselves: and articles have been exhibited of either to other in writing, and answers given in on both sides, and a treaty which the council thereupon appointed and yielded unto. Notwithstanding all this, they still injuriously exhibit complaints against us of untruths, foul and odious, as of late to your honour, and to the lord North [who was their high steward and friend] in court; and here to the lord chief justice and his assistants, they do in open speeches except against our established jurisdiction or consistories, lawful censures, the best of our ancient proclamations, the right of our leet; and have notoriously disfranchised many of their own corporation, for serving the queen at our leet lately holden. They summon our known privileged persons to their town sessions: they award process against them: they daily commit them: they openly discharge victuallers: they take scholars' horses to serve post upon ordinary commission: and generally they adventure to do any thing against our charters with such unwonted boldness and violence, that we shall be driven of necessity to seek relief extraordinary.

Whereof, before we make any resolution, we most humbly crave your honour's direction, ready to attend your pleasure in person, if it shall seem so good to your honour's wisdom. And so, with our most hearty prayers to God for

the long continuance of your happy days, we humbly take
our leave. At Cambridge, the 23d of June, 1597. ANNO
1597.

Your honour's in all duty most bounden,

Signed, John Jegon, vice-chan.
Roger Goad, Laur. Chaderton, Humfrey Tyndal,
Robert Some, Edward Barwel, Thomas Preston.

Number CCXXX.

*Dr. Jegon, vice-chancellor of Cambridge; in answer to the
lord their chancellor: who had advised him to carry him-
self temperately towards the mayor and his company.*

Rt. honourable my singular good lord,

AFTER my last answer returned to those slanderous
complaints that were exhibited by Mr. Mayor of Cam-
bridge, it pleased you to respite my appearing till you sent
for me: and also to advise me (in your honour's favour) to
carry myself temperately, in regard that the mayor and his
company had received hard opinion of my proceeding.
Since which time, (and also before,) I have forborne to do
any thing that might justly occasion any grievance whatso-
ever; in regard of your most gracious love to myself, and
tender care of this university, so reverently acknowledged
by us all, as that we are even afraid, lest our own com-
plaints made to your honour should be offensive. Not-
withstanding, whatever we do, the mayor still with great
violence doth so cross my proceedings, and abet offenders,
whom with assistances of wise men I do censure, as that ex-
cept it please your honour to look into his endeavour, and
to restrain his factious endeavours, neither shall I be able
any way to govern in my place, neither the poor town reap
those benefits and relief by scholars that it hath always re-
ceived.

For myself, although by reason of my place I sustain 313
under your honour, and my oath taken, I must maintain
the privileges of the university, (which, with the loss of all
the livings I have, I am willing to do,) yet for the common

ANNO
1597.

peace of both the bodies, and the good of the poor town wherein we live, I refer myself to any man, whomsoever you shall appoint to hear and order, confirm or reverse, whatsoever I have done or shall do. For our charter, which we have from so many noble princes, so many hundred years so inviolably enjoined, (in the name of the whole university,) I most humbly crave, that your honour would be pleased, either by yourself, or some at your honour's appointment, to take knowledge and view of them. And if ought therein be unequal, to cause it to be revoked; or otherwise reasonable, to confirm and strengthen them against the bold and intolerable attempts of insolent and unmannerly men, that live by us and our societies, and yet would never endure us, or freedoms granted; but have always grown from envious dislike to malicious practice, and open tumultuous mutinies, to their own overthrow and utter disfranchising, as in former princes' times is notoriously recorded.

Wherefore, in tender care of the commonwealth of both these bodies, we humbly beseech again and again your honour's advice and assistance to withstand the beginnings of their malicious purposes; shaming to make (as they use to do) any particular or personal complaints to your honour. Whereof, if it please you to vouchsafe the hearing, this bearer, one of the proctors of the university, can deliver many just, grievous, and very foul. So, most humbly recommending to your honour's wisdom the fatherly care of this your university, I beseech the Lord God long to preserve your honour in happy days. At Cambridge, this 23d of July, 1597.

Your honour's most bounden at command always,
Jo. Jegon, vice-chanc.

Number CCXXXI.

ANNO
1597.

*Questions disputed at a commencement at Cambridge in
the year 1597: of law, divinity, and philosophy.*

Quæstiones juris civilis.

1. POTESTAS gladii est penes solum principem.
2. Civitas, quæ se protectioni alienijus submiserat, ei subest.
3. Factum principis præstare tenetur respublica.
4. Alienigenæ apud nos commorantes legibus et statutis Angliæ obligantur.
5. Ubi princeps est, ibi patria est.
6. Statutum generale, licet contrarium, statuto priori speciali non detraxit.
7. Beneficium principis latissimam interpretationem habere debet. 314
8. Judex pœnam quam irrogavit, remittere non potest.

Quæstiones theologicæ.

1. Politica Mosis non sunt Christianis rebus publicis obtrudenda.
2. Unio personalis non tollit carnis Christi circumscriptionem.

This against the papists' real presence: the former against the Calvinists, that fetch the church government from Moses.

Quæstiones philosophicæ.

1. Omnis mutatio reip. est perniciosa.
2. Mediocritas est tutissima ratio conservandi respublicas.
3. Metus magnatum est causa seditionis.
4. Magistratus iisdem semper sunt committendi.
5. Æqualitas in republica est periculosa.
1. Animus est aut numerus vel figura.
2. Natura non admittit infinitum.
3. Sensus non falluntur.
4. Cerebrum est principium sentiendi.
5. Anima sequitur temperaturam corporis.

ANNO
1597.

Number CCXXXII.

Charisma, sive Donum Sanationis:

Being a book in quarto; written in Latin by William Tooker, queen Elizabeth's chaplain, and dedicated to her; dated prid. id. Jan. 1597: treating concerning her cures in the king's evil, by this miraculous gift of healing, imparted to her.

IT was written against such as denied that gift to the queen. He shewed in this book, how this queen excelled all other princes and her own ancestors in this gift. He hath a chapter of the manner and form of healing: wherein is discoursed concerning the simplicity and chastity of the ceremonies and rites in healing those afflicted with the king's evil; and of the piety, charity, and humility of the prince. There is another chapter, of the certainty of the effects, and the wonderfulness of the events in those who have obtained their health.

This Tooker was for some years present when the queen touched, and when many miserable mortals, as he writ, were restored to their former soundness and health: and avowed, and gave his faith, [in these words, *obligavi fidem meam,*] that he could produce many who had been restored to their healths, even of such who were ready to believe
 315 that that power of healing was ceased, but, as it were, astonished at it, held their peace. He mentioned a man who, going into the country from London, met another of good carriage, but a Romanist, who after divers words asked him, what news? He said, he was lately come out of prison, and being grieved with the *king's evil*, after the trial of many remedies, kneeling before the queen Elizabeth had been perfectly *et sanissime* [as the word is] cured; and ingenuously acknowledged, that he now at length found by experience, that the pope's excommunication denounced against her majesty was of no moment: for if she had not by right obtained the sceptre of the kingdom, and her throne established by the authority and appointment of God, what she attempted could not have succeeded; be-

cause the rule is, that God is not any where witness to a
lie. ANNO
1597.

He said moreover in his said book, that he met with several afterward, who had been touched by the queen; and he asked them, if their disease returned; but they confessed ingenuously to him, *sanissimos esse ex illo tempore*, that they were in perfect health from that time, and freed from all *incommoditate morbida*.

That in the city of Exeter, John Capel, son of an honest citizen, and another, daughter to one Appelin, were both healed of the king's evil. Both which, when they had in vain tried other remedies, were bid by Francis Brine, an Italian, and exile for the gospel, a doctor of physic, to go to the queen, and desire to be healed. Who came home joyful and glad, and as sound as fishes.

John Sherland of Molton, in the archdeaconry of Barum, now alive and well, openly professed, that he sunk with despair; found no ease, but the touch of the queen's hand.

The writer added, that he knew a certain woman, of the family of the Turberviles, who for ten years remained cured of that disease. He looked upon her, and asked her, where her gold was of the queen's gift that was wont to be hanged about her neck. She blushing said, that because she was poor, she had sold it for necessary uses. I presently understood, that the gold was nothing else but the symbol of health; and that health lasted without gold. At length he concluded, that it was sure the queen had cured many thousands; and that it would make a great volume to set them all down.

Once in Gloucestershire the people came in vast flocks and crowds, to see the queen touch certain that had the evil; when the queen used these words to them: "I wish
"I might afford you help and assistance. It is God that
"is the best and great physician of all. He is the wise and
"holy Jehovah, who will help your diseases. He is to be
"prayed to." Wherever she came, she set before her eyes

ANNO
1597.

God, the giver and founder of the help of body and soul. And made God her helper, whensoever she cured those that were brought to her affected with these diseases. But that it was clear, by the confession of these diseased persons, by the relation of physicians, by the recitation of pamphlets, and the certainty of what had happened, that some were healed presently, others more quick, others more slowly, at the distance of longer time; very many were restored to the best temper of body, and a continual habit of health.

316

Number CCXXXIII.

A book of prayers printed this year, 1597; being certain prayers, set forth by authority, to be used for the prosperous success of her majesty's forces and navy. They were eight in number. The first whereof was of the queen's composing; and was as followeth:

OH GOD! almaker, keeper, and guider: inurement of thy rare seen, unused and seeld heard of, goodness poured in so plentiful sort upon us full oft, breeds now this boldness to crave, with bowed knees and hearts of humility, thy large hand of helping power, to assist with wonder our just cause, not founded on pride's motion, or begun on malice-stock; but, as thou best knowest, (to whom nought is hid,) grounded on just defence from wrongs, hate, and bloody desire of conquest. For since means thou hast imparted to save that thou hast given, by enjoying such a people as scorns their bloodshed, where surety ours is one. Fortify, dear God, such hearts in such sort, as their best part may be worst, that to the truest part, meant worse, with least loss to such a nation as despise their lives for their country's good: that all foreign lands may laud and admire the omnipotency of thy works, a fact alone for thee only to perform. So shall thy name be spread for wonders wrought, and the faithful encouraged to repose in thy unfellowed grace: and we that minded nought but right, en-

chained in thy bonds for perpetual slavery, and live and die the sacrificers of our souls for such obtained favour. ANNO
1597.
Warrant, dear lord, all this with thy command. *Amen.*

This was that queen's stiff, affected language. Imprinted at London by the deputies of Chr. Barker, printer to the queen's most excellent majesty, 1597. 4to.

The first prayer is in a different character from the rest, to shew it, as I presume, to be composed by a different hand. The queen's arms prefixed.

Number CCXXXIV.

The captain-general of the king of Spain's army: his commission Englished; in the year 1597.

Don Martin Padilla, governor of Castile, lord of Gadea and Buendia, captain-general of the army of his majesty, and of the Spanish galleys, and of the royal army in the ocean seas.

BEING commanded by his majesty to raise in this kingdom a quantity of footmen, for to serve him at sea and land, wherein to me it shall seem good, serving upon wages in this army, because of the news that we have that the enemy armeth; by reason of the small number we have in 317 our army, that they cannot go to such parts needful; and thither being come, that they may have sufficient defence as well in the sea as land, for the execution and accomplishing that which his majesty commandeth; it is fit to provide persons for captains to levy them, order, and govern them to the parts of service in Christendom, with ability and sufficiency as to this effect is required. And being satisfied of the good parts in you, Francisco de Godoy, in this and many other services, I trust you will put forward yourself for the service of his majesty, as you have always done for the space of twenty-four years, in Italy and in Spain, in Granada, having the charge of the captainship of one hundred and fifteen men, being master of the camp Antonio

ANNO
1697.

Moreno; and also in all the journeys of Portugal, Tercera, and in the army of the duke of Medina to England, being then ancient to the said Antonio Moreno de Godoy, your brother. And since you have served in the galleys at the enemy's coming to Cales. Whereof you have given good account, and reason of your said service; hoping, that the like you will do in all that is committed unto you, at this present I do make choice, create, and name you, in the name of his majesty, for captain of the Spanish footmen; and as such an one, I give you charge that you take up the greatest numbers of men you can in the towns of the Moors, and in the liberties thereof, and in six leagues' compass; that is, in the towns of Noye and Vergantines; notwithstanding the same liberties are appointed to other persons for the same effect. If you find resistance, let the parties come to me, that I may appoint them in such places thereabouts, being places of more account.

In behalf of his majesty I exhort you, and for my part I pray you, the justices of the said kingdom, of whatsoever quality or condition they be, that they give all the favour and help they can, or you shall need of, to raise the same number to that effect and intent of his majesty, providing you place to lodge, for you and yours, every one in their places and liberties, without taking any thing of you, as they were accustomed, nor also to suffer them to make any tumult or offence; but rather to use you with good entertainment, as men that remain in his majesty's service, giving you for your monies such provisions and other things you shall have need of, at reasonable prices without extortion.

Also I ordain and command, that all such soldiers or officers of companies, that they acknowledge and repute you to be their captain, and obey such orders as you shall make for the service of his majesty, as if they were serving under myself. And the like commandment I give to all masters of camps and sergeants, or their assistants, and to all other officers and soldiers of this army to allow you for a captain of footmen; and that they observe unto you the

like honour and reverence, with all other preeminences and privileges that they enjoy, or shall enjoy, in any captain of footmen of his majesty's. ANNO
1597.

And in having any quantity of men you shall give advice to us, that we may send a commissary, to take the muster and list of them, and to put them down upon the king's pay from that day that you begin to enjoy them, or take your charge; and likewise of all the officers and soldiers of your band.

And for the present I do ordain don Francisco de Mosco 318 to be overseer general of the said army; and to the paymaster, that he put it down in his books of office, to put it in execution, and to pass you over unto the paymaster of the said army, to allow you your due in pay. And for your better confirmation, I give you this firmity with my name and hand, sealed with the seal of my arms, ratified by the secretary within written. Who shall return you the original. To the end that you may have it for your style or title of your office. Made in Ferol, the 28th of May, 1597.

Number CCXXXV.

GEORGE ABBOT, afterwards archbishop of Canterbury, this year, 1597, read theses upon six questions in the divinity schools in Oxford: *pro forma discussæ, et discutiendæ*. Whereof the sixth question was, *An Deus sit author peccati? Negatur*. They were afterwards printed at Oxford, by Jos. Barnes, university printer.

Number CCXXXVI.

A relation of the stirs in Wisbich castle among the secular priests and Jesuits. A book set forth 1597.

WHEREIN is shewn how the Jesuits and seculars made such quarrels, that they divided their tables; and one, the greater part of them, was driven out of the common hall by the help of the gaoler. And to prevent the

ANNO

1597.

Jesuits charging the seculars to make a separation here in the castle of Wisbich, they sat at every table in the hall. For had the Jesuits' faction been so much against the lesser number, that they had flocked together at one table, the separation should have been fathered upon them, although they never dreamt thereof. And this humour of the Jesuits being known by them, they used to sit at every table some; because it should be manifest, that the other side made the separation.

Number CCXXXVII.

Dr. Elie's Notes. And Dr. Bagshaw set forth some things in the end of those Notes. Both seculars. Which Notes related to the controversy in the business of Wisbich.

THE quarrel at Wisbich among the prisoners was between the secular priests and the Jesuits, or between the priests and archpriest; and with what ambition they sought their own preferment in the castle of Wisbich; and by what
 319 scandal they wrought it by a most wicked separation or schism. At what time the true state of the question was, Whether the Jesuits and their fellow-factions committed any sin, and did like Christians, in making their division in Wisbich from their fellow-prisoners and priests as they were..... The question was, Whether the priests were bound to subject themselves to the authority procured by falsehood, as the letter of institution shewed, and promoted with falsehood; as then the archpriest could not deny, being taken in the manner, and put in execution contrary to the tenor thereof; having no letter from his holiness.

Mr. Blackwel [that was the archpriest's name] sent for Mr. Collington and Mr. Charnock, and urged them to like of the said institution, and threatened them, that unless they would positively affirm that they did like thereof, he was to send information to Rome, that they did dislike thereof. But would give no other answer than this, that they did neither like nor would dislike, but would bear themselves as became catholic priests to do.

Number CCXXXVIII.

ANNO
1597.

The former of these, John Collington, afterwards wrote a book of this matter, entitled, An Appeal to Rome, made by the priests from the archpriest. Subscribed by several priests, Oswald, Needham, &c.

THIS gave great offence to the archpriest; that in a letter to a lay-gentleman, in the year 1601, April 16, he affirmed, that he writ to him to make him privy of the spiritual danger wherein he and all that received any spiritual sacrament of Oswald, Needham might be; if it were so, that the said Needham had subscribed unto a seditious pamphlet, coloured with the name of *An Appeal*. And he denounced Mr. Rob. Drewry to have incurred the penalty of the decrees for subscribing the same. And he sent him a form of submission which he was to make, or not to be restored; viz. *Ego N. confiteor*, &c. in English, "I do confess and acknowledge, that without any just cause I have complained of grievances, and many injuries offered me by the most reverend archpriest, and have cast upon him the blame of these dissertions, tumults, and deadly wars; and that I have transgressed his wholesome decrees. Of all which I humbly crave pardon, restitution of my faculties, and the removing of censures if I have incurred them. I recall all these aforesaid, and do greatly wish that I had never spoken, written, or approved them. Moreover I do swear that I will hereafter behave myself peaceably and obediently towards this my superior, and will procure, according to my bounden duty, what lieth in me, that others do the same." London, March 1600.

But about a year after this constitution of the archpriest came the pope's breve, that confirmed his said authority. It bore date the 17th of August, 1601. Upon which all without delay yielded themselves.

ANNO
1597.

Number CCXXXIX.

320 *Dr. Mey, bishop of Carlisle, deceased at Dalston Feb. 17, 1597: and interred in the cathedral the same day in the evening. From the register of the parish of Dalston in Cumberland. He was elected fellow of queen's college, Cambridge, anno 1550.*

FEBRUARY 15, 1597. Reverendus in Christo pater Johannes Mey, divina providentia episcopus Carloliensis, hora octava matutina, decimi quinti diei Februarii mortem oppetuit, et hora octava vespertina ejusdem diei Carloliensi in ecclesia sepultus fuit.

Cujus justa celebrabantur die sequente Dalstonii.

Number CCXL.

The archbishop of York to the lord treasurer: touching the loan; which some of the clergy were assessed to lend.

My honourable good lord,

ACCORDING to direction, the council and I called before us such as Mr. Scudamore, his majesty's receiver here, informed to be slow in the loan money. Some did allege, that at the last loan they were unpaid, some two, some three years. Some openly protested, and offered to swear, that they were not worth in all the world so much as was demanded. Others were humble suitors to be borne withal till the spring, that they might make money of some of their goods. But in fine, many of them have paid willingly; not one refusing in mutinous manner, though some in mourning manner complain of the hardness of the time, and great dearth of all things.

I wish there had been more indifferency in direction of the privy seals: for I know some clergymen that are not worth so much as they are assessed to lend, and yet must they pay tenths and double subsidy; which will go very hard with them.

Mr. Scudamore hath been very painful and diligent in

this her majesty's service: and yet useth himself so, as there is no exclamation against him. Which is a plain demonstration of a settled opinion in the subject, of her majesty's very wise and godly government, and of his discreet and good carriage of himself in a matter that hath often been unpleasant unto the people. And thus beseeching God long to bless your lordship with his manifold graces, I bid you most heartily farewell. From York, the 9th of February, 1597.

ANNO
1597.

Number CCXLI.

321

The archbishop of York to the lord treasurer: upon directions for keeping sir Rob. Car, lord Seyforth, an hostage from Scotland.

YESTERNIGHT very late I received your lordship's letters of the 21st of this month, to receive sir Rob. Car, alias the lord of Sesforth, and him to keep in safe effect at Bishopthorp, or some other place without the city of York; so that no access of strangers be unto him. The last hostages in the time of besieging of Edinburgh castle were placed by my lord of Huntington in her majesty's house there; which is without the city, and much more in safety than either Bishopthorp or any other place near hand. They had them sometime in their chamber, and sometimes at the coancil-table. If it please her majesty, I will lodge him in this house under the charge of some of mine own men, and of Mr. Rafe Westthorp, sergant at arms, who liveth in this house, and hath nothing else to do.

The sitting continueth the three first weeks in Lent; and the assizes the fourth week: therefore I am desirous to have him near unto me, that I may have a vigilant eye upon him: for I understand that the gentleman is wise and valiant, but somewhat haughty here and resolute. I would pray your lordship that I may have directions too, whether he may not go with his keeper in my company to sermons, and whether he may not sometime dine with the

ANNO
1597.

council, as the last hostages did. And thirdly, whether he may sometimes be brought to sitting to the common hall, where he may see how careful her majesty is, that the poorest subject in her kingdom may have their right, and that her people seek remedy by law, and not by revenging themselves. Perhaps it may do him good as long as he liveth.

Thus beseeching God long to bless your good lordship with his manifold graces.....From York, the 25th of February, 1597.

Your good lordship's, &c.

Matth. Ebor.

Number CCXLII.

The archbishop to the lord treasurer's answer.

Right honourable,

THIS morning, at eight of the clock, I received sir Rob. Car, the lord of Sesforth, whom I am now sending to Bishopthorp by Mr. Sergeant Westthorp my comptroller, and other of my servants, to be kept according to her majesty's
322 direction and commandment. Who tells me that he hath been used to open air; and therefore prayeth me to write to your lordship to be a means to her majesty that he may have some more liberty for his health's sake; and he will give security, or his word, (which it is said he doth chiefly regard,) that he will be true prisoner. Thus beseeching God.....From York, 16th of March, 1597.

Number CCXLIII.

Otto duke of Brunswick and Lunenbergh to the lord Burghley. Salutatio. Wishing success to the queen's fleet, preparing against her enemies.

Dei gratia Otto dux Brunsvicensium et Lunæburgensium.

S. illustris et generose comes, amice carissime,

POSTQUAM cognovimus te Dei beneficio salvum et incolumem adhuc esse, non potuimus intermittere, quin te ve-

teram atque singularem nostrum amicum hisce nostris inviseremus, tibi que de felici tuo statu gratularemur. Deus Opt. Max. te multos annos valentem et incolumem conservet. Cumque nobis perlatum sit serenissimam Angliæ reginam contra hostes suos et refractarios iterum magnam classem reparasse, et omni apparatu bellico instruxisse, quæ brevi a litore solvet, quare a Deo Opt. Max. felicem successum et prosperum exitum, precamur, et optamus; ut, rebus graviter expeditis, salva et integra in amplissimo Angliæ regno appellere possit. Tum quoque ardentibus votis Omnipotentem precamur, ut regiam illius majestatem ab omnibus insidiis inimicorum semper et ubique, uti hactenus fecit, clementissime protegat, ac plurimos in annos regno amplissimo salvam, et superstitem benigne conservet; omniaque consilia et actus ad nominis sui gloriam porro dirigat et secundet.

Vale, amice carissime, et reginæ vestræ clementissimæ de meliori nota nos commendare haud graveris. Datæ in arce nostra Harburgo, 28. Junii, MDXCVII.

Otto dux Bruns. et Lunenb.

Number CCXLIV.

The said duke of Brunswick to the said lord Burghley, upon the queen's declaration of sending forth her fleet against Spain.

Dei beneficio Otto Brunovicensium et Lunenburgensium dux, &c.

S. LITERAS tuas, illustris et generose comes, amice singulariter dilecte, serenissimæ reginæ Angliæ aula regia Grenovici, 23. Julii datas, una cum implicito exemplari declarationis clementissimæ nostræ reginæ, quam cuilibet innotescere et voluit et fecit; quibus causis adducta hanc classem adornaret, et instruxerit; minister noster 5to Augusti bene tradidit. Et quanquam antehac ejus declarationis exemplar Belgicæ linguæ ad nos pervenerit, nihilominus tamen hæc quoque tua Latini exemplaris communicatio, ut

ANNO
1597.

singularis tuæ erga nos benevolentia argumentum, gratissima fuit. Dolemus profecto, quod classis illa, contrario et impetuoso vento, magno cum periculo, a recto cursu repulsa sit; e contra lætatur quoque quod Dei beneficio (cui laus et honos) sine ulla vel hominis vel navis jactura, salva in optimum portum delata est. Unde propositum primum iter, optimo favente orientali vento jam cum cœpit, quo, Deo volente, (a cujus nutu omnia pendent,) dies aliquot continuente, non dissidis, quin optatos exitus sit nactura.

Neque sane est, quod dubitas, quin Deus Opt. Max. regiae majestatis tam justum defensionis opus optimo et felicissimo exitu sit beaturus; atque omnia hostium et adversariorum consilia, conatus et molitiones, ut antehac sæpius, (pro quo illi laus et gloria,) benigne et elementer fecit, in propriam perniciem retorqueat, et regiam majestatem sub teginine alarum suarum protegat et defendat, longa vita, quieto regni sui statu, et omni fortunæ flatu secundo uti, frui faciat. Quod profecto regiae ejus majestati ex animo precamur et optamus, petentes amice ut nos ames, et regiae majestati de meliori nota commendare non graveris. Deus Opt. Max. te diu salvum et incolumem servare non dedignetur. Datæ 3^o Septembris, anno 97^o.

Otto dux Bruns. et Lunenb.

Number CCXLV.

The said duke of Brunswick's letter to the lord Burghley, writ the next year, 1598. upon the return of the queen's agent, Lesieur, sent to the electors and princes of Germany.

Otto, Dei beneficio dux Brunswicensium, et Lunaburg. &c.

Anno 1598. POSTEAQUAM, illustris et generose comes, amice singulariter dilecte, præsens elementissime vestrae reginae legatus generosus, nobisque singulariter dilectus vir, dominus Stephanus Lesieur, demandatis sibi a regia majestate negotiis apud electores et principes quosdam imperii feliciter expeditis et confectis, Augliam repetit; nolumus in-

mittere, quin hisce nostris te invisceremus, et memoriam ANNO
pristinæ familiaritatis refricarem. Jucundum nobis auditu 1598.
fuit, te secundo rerum statu et bona valetudine frui. Deus
Opt. Max. ea largiri velit, quæ ad præsentis et futuræ vitæ
beatitudinem salutaria sunt.

Quo successu legatus clementissimæ vestræ reginæ nego-
tia expediverit, ipse coram prolixius enarrabit. Omnipotens
Pater faxit, ut hujusmodi publicæ tranquillitatis perturba-
tiones propediem tollantur, et magno totius Christianæ
reip. commodo, pax et tranquillitas publicæ stabiliatur et
confirmetur. Quod a Deo Opt. Max. ex intimis animi votis
precamur, et paternæ ejus tuteke te diu salvum et incolu-
men conservandum committimus; tibi que propense bene 324
volumus, et favemus. Quod itidem ut tu quoque facias,
noque clementissimæ nostræ reginæ de meliori nota com-
mendare non graveris, amice petimus. Datæ ex arce nos-
tra Harburgo, 17 Martii, anno MDXCVIII.

Otto dux Bruns. et Lunenb.

Number CCXLVI.

*Considerations of a motion for a treaty of peace with the
king of Spain: upon a motion of the French king:
drawn up by the lord treasurer Burghley, and writ by
his own hand: and seems to be some of his last writ-
ings.*

IF it shall be held for a certainty, that there can be no
condition obtained by her majesty for assurance of the
United Provinces, to continue their estate, without evident
danger to be in short time subdued to the king of Spain's
absolute power, as they were in former times, then it were
in vain to send any to treat for any particular peace for
England: for that the queen of England can have no as-
surance to continue a particular peace, except she may be
also assured that the United Provinces may be free from
the danger of such conquest, as by good proofs are known
to have been intended at the first coming of the duke of

ANNO
1598.

Alva with his armies into those countries. And so also the like purposes continued by the king of Spain's ministers, with intention thereby to invade and conquer England.

So if upon these grounds no treaty shall be convenient for England, then may the French king be answered, that though there be a commission sent for the Spaniard to treat of a peace with England, yet considering without a good accord to be made for the United Provinces, for their assurance against the former purposes of Spain, her majesty can make no account for continuance of any peace with Spain. And for that the deputy of the States have peremptorily answered the French king, that they will not, nor may, with their safety, yield their consent to hearken to a treaty with Spain. And so also other their deputies, being sent hither to her majesty, do concur in the same opinion, to refuse such treaty; notwithstanding that they have been with sundry reasons moved to the contrary. Whereunto they will in no wise yield; but do rather choose to continue in their defence; earnestly urging the queen's majesty to continue her confederacy with them. Though it hath not pleased the French king, according to the former joint league, both offensive and defensive, to perform the same, but to hearken to make a peace apart for himself. And hereupon her majesty, considering with herself that her danger from Spain shall continue, notwithstanding any form of peace to be made by her apart, if the United Provinces shall not have a good accord with Spain; whereof 325 they do despair; and whereof also her majesty hath no causes of doubt, being no wise informed of any good disposition in the king of Spain's commissioners, or in the cardinal, to make any good accord with the United Provinces, but to the contrary by good proof, which her majesty hath seen in the very letters and writings between the cardinal and the deputies concerning hard conditions for the States, that cannot be denied.

And so upon these former reasons, her majesty may with honour, and without misliking of the French king, impart these reasons to him, why her majesty cannot with her

ANNO
1598.

safety accept any treaty for peace with Spain, except she may also see the States better assured of a peace than she seeth a disposition thereto on their part. And so the king may be thanked for his intercession made for his obtaining of the commission from Spain; but to require him, that his commissioners may be directed to inform the Spanish deputies upon what grounds and for what reasons for this time her majesty will forbear to send any commissioners to treat of any peace with the king of Spain, except she may be more certainly informed how the United Provinces shall continue in surety from their manifest dangers of subversion; and thereby also her majesty ensured from the dangers that have been intended against her realm by the Spaniards' absolute conquest of those Low Countries, thereby to invade her countries. A true knowledge whereof being had, her majesty will never refuse to assent to any peace: a matter very profitable for all parts, and therefore to be approved.

A consideration of a second course to be held for the treaty.

Considering an offer is made by a sufficient commission from the king of Spain, to treat with her majesty of a peace, and that it is to be confessed of all Christians, that where peace may be had, there the refusal thereof, by continuing of war, will displease Almighty God, who is a God of peace, and an avenger by way of war: and for that no war can be ended by form of a peace without treaty; and for that without a treaty it cannot be certainly known with what conditions at this time a peace may be had, with consent of the parties that are in war, without proof by conference and treaty to be had by ministers thereto authorized: therefore there is great reason, both to content Almighty God, who is best pleased with peacemakers, and to satisfy the opinion of all men that shall hear of this offer, and to comfort the good people of the realm that desire to live in peace, to authorize and send some convenient number of persons of respective qualities to join with the Spanish de-

ANNO
1598.

puties, to treat hercof according as they shall be instructed from her majesty to enter into the same with due respect to her honour. And if in their precepts they shall perceive, that by treaty there cannot be obtained such conditions as shall be by her majesty precisely required according to reason, and indifference for all parties now in war, to enjoy an assured peace; then it shall be no displeasing to God; nor to be disliked of any indifferent persons for the commissioners of England, to forbear to prosecute the treaty upon the wilful refusal of the Spanish, either to allow her majesty's demands, or by their urging from her majesty of unreasonable conditions to be granted by her.

326 And for the prosecution of this purpose for sending, answer would be sent to the French king, that according to his request reported by her ambassador, her majesty's principal secretary to be advertised within forty days, from the coming away of the ambassador, whether her majesty would consent to send her commissioners to treat with the Spaniards, her majesty hath yielded to with some difficulty, how to resolve, and to return answer within that number of days; considering of those forty days there were..... days past before her ambassador, or any from him, could come into England; partly, by the long and tedious journey he had from Nantes through Brittain to the seaside, to take his passage into England, which he adventured against all favourable winds, having spent of the time limited two days and two nights on the seas with great hazard. But at his coming, being informed of the French king's earnestness to have answer within forty [days], her majesty weighing the cause to be of a great weight, as it is, either to proceed, or of so short a time to consider thereof, having a mind not to be noted in the world to refuse to live in peace, being offered, neither yet to fear her enemy, that shall refuse to accord to reasonable conditions, she hath yielded to send certain commissioners into France, to some convenient place; to meet with such as shall be authorized from the king of Spain to meet and treat hercof.

And therefore she requireth of the French king these things following, to be reported to this her messenger Edmonds [sir Tho. Edmonds.]

ANNO
1598.

1. That she may know who shall be authorized on the Spanish part to treat. For it is not convenient, that any authorized by the pope, as either the legate, the nuncio, or any other, be admitted to be participant in this treaty, which properly belongeth but to the king of Spain and the queen of England: except the French king shall offer to name some of his council as indifferent persons, to further the treaty by reasonable motions to both parties.

2. To have a copy of the king's commission, and of their deputation, to the end that her majesty may, finding the same sufficient, form the like in her commission.

3. That a place indifferent may be named for meeting, being as near in some parts of Picardy as may be to the seaside: and that a large safe conduct may be given on the king of Spain's part for the commissioners of England and their train to land in any place; and to pass safely from their landing to the place of the meeting. And so also to return safe without let or stay, by any of the king of Spain's subjects, or ministers, or by any of his soldiers.

After these things had, and her majesty's commissioners thereby warranted to proceed, these things following seem to be necessary to be delivered to them, besides their general commissions by way of instruction.

Instructions.

At their first meeting, after an interchangeable view of the commissions on both parts, and finding them agreeable to the copies afore delivered, either party shall deliver to the other true copies of their commissions in writing, subscribed with their hands. That being done, our commissioners shall require, that before they shall begin to treat of any condition of peace, they may deliver some speeches by way of a preface, to declare our sincerity in proceeding, since we heard from the French king of any offer by the cardinal for the king of Spain to treat of a peace with the French king, and consequently with us. Hereof what re-

ANNO
1598.

port hath been made of her majesty's dealing herein, this in brief is the truth: Here being, by a message sent by one of the French king's council, named mons. De Mezzy, informed, that the French king had an offer from the king of Spain to treat with him for a peace, and that the cardinal had authority so to do, and also to treat with her majesty: and therefore, considering he was bound by a league both with her majesty and the states of the United Provinces to continue the war against the king of Spain, the common enemy, he required the queen's majesty to certify him whether she would make choice to continue the war, or to hearken to peace: for thereto would he conform himself in answering the cardinal. To this her majesty made answer, that she had cause to doubt, that though this offer to the French king to make peace with him might have warrant, but yet for any treaty for peace to be offered to her majesty, she understood of no good warrant from the king of Spain. And when De Mezzy said that he thought that the cardinal might have authority, then her majesty, to increase her doubt of insufficient dealing, called to remembrance, and so told monsieur De Mezzy, how deceitfully she had been used by the king of Spain in the year of 88, to take advantage of her, by offering her by the duke of Parma, both by sundry messages and letters, that he was authorized from the king of Spain to treat for a peace. Whereon the said duke, with as good earnestness of good meaning as by words and oaths he could, did affirm the same: and thereupon the queen's majesty, trusting that the king of Spain was of the same mind, she did send a solemn ambassade of her privy-counsellors, whereof one was an ancient earl of the realm, the other also an ancient baron of the same, and others of the council of her state: who when they came to the place appointed for their meeting, and demanding to see the commission from the king, whereof the duke of Parma had made mention, there was none extant; but by speech it was said that they looked for one shortly out of Spain. But while such one was thus promised, and treaty held on, her majesty had certain knowledge of the king's

preparation of a navy and army, so mighty, as the like never was made in any men's memory, and with all haste possible, to come to the narrow seas to invade this realm, with an opinion to conquer it: and for that purpose so published, and whole families shipped to have inhabited this realm. Whereupon her majesty, for defence of her realm, armed some number of ships, far inferior in number to the king of Spain's; yet Almighty God, for her defence, and to be justly revenged upon this manner of deceitful dealing of the king of Spain, to further his dangerous attempts by colour to treat of a peace, did subvert the king of Spain's great army with such a ruin, as to this day he hath not been able to make the like.

ANNO
1598.

This dishonourable accident hath been known to the world to be true. And you our commissioners may boldly say, if Richardot the king's president shall be there, he cannot truly deny it; but rather may be charged as privy to the same, as he was openly at Burborough by our commissioners charged. And doubting of some like accident to accompany this, here offer in the name of the cardinal, did forbear to give any resolute answer to De Mezzy; but sent soon our principal secretary, with some others, to the French king, to understand the truth, how any offer was made from the king of Spain to treat with us: but in fine we could not understand that there was any commission indeed from the king of Spain to treat with us, but the commission from the king of Spain was only to treat with the French king. And as this was discovered to us by the sight of a multitude of writings of the cardinal and his deputies, being at Vervin, so the French king also, by his deputies, found that to be true which we formerly doubted, that indeed there was no commission from the king of Spain. Whereupon, to reform this abuse, the Spanish commissioners offered to send into Spain for a commission, requiring the French king to give a safety for their messenger to pass into Spain: which he did. And after some good time spent at the return of our ambassador, told him, that his deputy

ANNO
1598.

affirmed, that there was now come a sufficient commission, though they could not have a copy thereof. Which had not been inconvenient to have been seen, that the like might have been made by us.

Now you shall have, sir, his Spanish deputies, to consider whether we have not dealt sincerely, in prolonging of the time of our answer, whether we would assent at this time to treat, or no: and so you shall conclude that you will enter to treat. For prosecution whereof you shall observe these directions following.

First, You shall require to know of them, whether there be any intention in them to debate upon the occasions that have ministered these great hostilities between these two crowns, that aforetime had such perfect amity betwixt them, and of the long continuance, as the like was never, of such perpetuity, nor for such utility for the subjects on both parties; but especially for those of England, from the house of Burgundy, and all the Low Countries: insomuch, that not only the kings of England, and the dukes of Burgundy, and the earls of Flanders, Holland, and some other provinces, did make treats, both for amity with the nobility, cities and great towns of England, for mutual defence of one to the other. For the which there do remain particular bonds and seals here among the queen's records, for performance thereof; which strict manner is not to be seen in any other foreign dominions. And by force of such mutual bonds, never repealed, there remaineth just cause for the subjects on both sides to regard their mutual preservation and their safety. But considering it hath been publicly and truly witnessed to the world the first notable unfriendly actions of the king of Spain, refusing at the beginning of the queen's reign to ratify his father's treaties, commonly named, *Fœdus structum amicitiae*: and so by degrees did incite certain of the greatest of the nobility of England to rebel; and at the same time sought how to invade this realm, and acquiring into the absolute possession of the towns and ports of Holland, Zealand, and other places of the Low Coun-

tries: whereupon she did also for her defence strengthen herself sundry ways, to the misliking of the king of Spain, and to withstand his great hostility.

ANNO
1598.

329

But you shall say, since this meeting is to treat of peace and not of war, and how friendship that hath been exiled may be reduced home again, it shall be convenient to pass over the discussion of the cause, that hath produced such hostility, and to consider the state of the former treaties, both for mutual amity between the princes, and for the intercourse for the merchants and subjects on both sides: how conveniently the same are to be renewed by mutual covenants on both parts: and for a new treaty to be made with sufficient words, and in good form, to confirm and ratify all former treaties that were in force at the entry of the king of Spain to his duchy of Brabant, being termed his *joyous entry*; foreseeing to the beginning of the act of confirmation there by one general capitulation, that every of the princes, so for the love of peace, accord, that all actions past before this treaty of confirmation shall take place, that may any wise be pretended to have been done by either of the two princes or their subjects, or any other by their commandment, contrary to the treaties, either of the amity or of the intercourse of merchandise, shall be remitted, and a perpetual oblivion enjoined to be held and professed, without permitting any person by way of law or other fact to pursue, either for recompense or restitution of any thing taken from either part afore this confirmation. And that all prisoners of either side, that have not compounded or agreed for their ransom, to be delivered.

And this motion may be alleged to be reasonable from both parts, considering, that otherwise the diversity and multitude of acts committed on both parts on one another, in so many years, and so various places, it is not only difficult to discuss, but impossible to reduce them to any certainty; but whatsoever may be on the one side alleged to have been justly committed, there may be, both for the number and for the quality and greatness of the fact, as much alleged on the other side, to counterpoise the other;

ANNO and so must follow that which is called *compensatio*
 1598. *delicti.*

When you have thus far proceeded, whereby in outward appearance a form of a peace between us may seem to be assented to, you shall require them to consider, that it becometh us, as well for the continuing of a peace, as for the framing of one in words and sentences; therefore you must let them understand, that the time hath given just occasion for us to add to this treaty some other matters, whereby we may be assured of the fruit of this peace. Which are these; not newly now devised, but the same whereof our commissioners at Borborough, in the year 1588, did treat; and if the navy of Spain had not then arrived and broke up that treaty, the commissioners were in good hope to have obtained their desires, having found the duke of Parma, in his private conference with some of our commissioners, well inclined to our commissioners' demands. And now you shall say, that we must, for our surety, renew the same to be now required, as then it was.

The first and principal matter that we are to demand is, to have the United Provinces, with whom now for our safety we are bound to a mutual defence, to have such assurance
 330 made to them, and promised to us also by special covenant, as they may continue in the state wherein they are, both for the government of the people and country, for their ancient liberties, and defence of their towns and ports, without changing of their profession or religion: which being granted with good assurance, we shall have just cause to accept that peace, before treated on, and to make account of the continuance thereof. But otherwise we manifestly see aforehand, that what manner of peace soever shall be offered in words and writing to us for ourselves will not be firmly kept; but opportunities taken to renew the Spanish counsels to attempt the subjecting of the principal towns and ports of the Low Countries, and to obtain the possession of their great shipping; to make with the same an invasion of England, as it were a bridge to come over into this realm. And you may well avow this to be no vain doubt, new invented by us, but

ANNO

1598.

that we have very notable good proof by sundry former actions, attempted in the duke of Alva's time, and the same continued by others the governors that succeeded him. And for more evidence to prove the intention of these actions merely against England, the same hath been manifested by sundry letters and discourses, in way of advice and counsel, intercepted, that have been by the king of Spain's counsellors and ministers so written at sundry times. And such hath been their earnestness therein, fraughted with diabolical malice, as divers of them, among whom some have been of the general governors, that have, to accomplish their purposes, hired certain persons to have killed us, and some to have poisoned us. Which purpose Almighty God in good time discovered to us, and the parties apprehended, and voluntarily confessed the same, and received their death for the same without repentance. But the author that moved them thereto, even with tokens from the king of Spain, being at the time of his procurement a governor of the Low Countries, though he could not but hear how the parties executed did openly avow him to have procured and hired them to the said horrible fact, did never give any cause to excuse himself.

Now for that it is like that the Spanish deputies will answer, that the people of the United Provinces are the king of Spain's subjects in right of his dukedom of Burgundy, and being earl of Holland and Zealand, and that we have no more interest to join with them than we will suffer the king to deal with our subjects in England; you may see, that if the king had not by his tyrannous governor oppressed them, and attempted to subdue them, to have exiled them that were natural and obedient, to have inhabited the country with Spaniards, as he hath generally done in other countries, and especially in India, by the destruction of more creatures than all Spain hath living, then in truth their answer to be allowed. But they are also to consider that this is not the question, whether we shall or may intermeddle in the causes concerning the king's subjects in general, but whether upon good proof finding that he doth

ANNO
1598.

- earnestly suppress his subjects, and seeketh by conquering of them both to plant his Spanish nation there, and with them, by possessing and conquering of those countries, to proceed thereby to the invasion and conquest of England;
- 331 these circumstances being certainly proved true by many certainties that cannot be justly denied, the question then, accompanied with those circumstances, is to be answered, that both the states of the provinces have just cause, even by the law of nature, to arm and defend their natural country and their families against the tyrannous, bloody attempts for their subversion, and planting of strangers, Spaniards, not unlike to tigers, in their habitations. And so have we as just cause, for our own surety and our country, to join with the said States and their countries, to preserve them so in their liberties, as the Spaniard, intending to conquer them, shall not also prosecute their intention to conquer England.

And for that it is like the Spanish commissioners will, for answer to these your arguments, peremptorily deny, that any good proof can be made of the king's intention to subdue or to oppress the Low Countries, or to invade England, you shall have a collection made of the sundry actions committed by his governors, and of sundry other his ministers: which are so many in number, and so various in their qualities, as were a tedious work to be inserted in these instructions. To which collection we do remit you, to use the same, or any part thereof, for maintenance of the foresaid matters alleged for the defence of the said States; as well by themselves as by us, against the common enmity professed and executed by the enemy.

After this manner of proceeding, to demand in general a surety for the States, you shall say, that you would be glad to understand in what sort and with what conditions they will offer to the States such good assurance as shall be necessary. Whereto, because we think it likely they will offer none, or very slender, you shall say, you will change your general demands into some particular. As first, that the provinces united may be permitted to continue themselves

ANNO
1598.

in arms for their defence, and that no forces be sent against them, they only continuing in their possessions, without attempting by any hostility upon any of the king's territories now in his possession. And for maintenance hereof, that some form of truce, or abstinence of war, may be accorded for some number of years. Secondly, that the people of the provinces may be governed, as they now are, by the natural officers of every province. And that it may be lawful for them to resort to any of the king of Spain's countries without restraint, either for their religion or any other cause, not being to the breach of peace, or to do injury to any man. Thirdly, to comfort them with opinion, that the king will not attempt by any outward force to invade them against his promise, that it may be ordained to send away out of all the Low Countries all strange soldiers; and that the necessary garrisons to be kept in the Low Countries may consist of the native people of the countries: as it is manifest that the whole States of every province have of late in their request to the cardinal desired. And so the same more reasonable to be granted, considering the peace now intended between the French king and the king of Spain; whereby the Low Countries shall enjoy a general peace, being a greater happiness to the cardinal, if he shall have with the infante the Low Countries, than hath happened to any per-332
son since the death of the emperor Charles.

And for more certainty, to avoid length in the treaty, you shall require, that the assurance may be agreeable to the pacificat of Gaunt, which was confirmed by the king, and sworn to by don Jhon.

Now you may say, that as by the former demands you have dealt specially for the States, so should you commit a great error, if you should not specially require some necessary things for us your sovereign. And for that purpose you shall require that no impediment be offered us by the king or his ministers, but that we may retain the possession of the two towns of Flushing and Brill, according to such covenants as are made between us and the States. Secondly, that if the States shall for their defence have need

ANNO
1598.

to be supported with any number of English soldiers, that it may be leeful for them to wage any convenient number of English, without charge of breach of covenant contained in our peace with Spain. [*This second condition hath cross set on the side.*]

Number CCXLVII.

The lord treasurer, lord Burghley, slandered by one Johnson, the queen's farmour of Claxby; whereof one Savyl was the bailiff, and Dobby and Goodwin two of the tenants, June 1598, that is, about a month or two before his death. The examination of this slander.

THIS farmour and his bailiff raised a slander of the said lord treasurer: of which, coming to his ears, he caused examination to be had about it; which was as followeth:

Brian Cottingham was sworn. The evidence was, that there being talk with Savyl about Mr. Johnson's affairs, he urged him to know of him for whom the kine were bought; he answered, for one of my lord treasurer's gentlemen. Whereupon Savyl said, "Let me entreat you to say, they were bought to give to my lord treasurer for a bribe, for that he had been so good a lord unto them; and I will promise you the best pair of hose that ever came on your legs: and if you can do so much for me and my master as to procure one Beck to say the like, I will give you three shillings more. And if you get a wife, my master will bestow an house on you, and you shall win his favour for ever. For the truth is, my master can have neither law nor justice at my lord treasurer's hands. And said, he hoped my lord would die before the next term, and then they may go shake their ears like villains." And this deponent denying to do any such thing, he desired him to hold his peace, or else his master and he were undone.

William Long sworn, That Savyl, Mr. Johnson's bailiff, told him, that his master said, that Dobby and Goodwin did buy ten kine and a bull, to give my lord treasurer for

a bribe, and that his master said he was like to lose 500*l.* and two hundred acres of ground; for that they made such means to my lord treasurer, as that he could not have law nor justice at my lord's hands. And that if he would go to London, and swear, as James Wilson promised him to do, that the same kine were bought for my lord, whereby my lord's displeasure might be had against them, he should have a farm of his master's: otherwise his master was like to lose a deal of his best ground. But he denying to meddle in the cause, he entreated him not to betray it. ANNO
1598.

Harrison sworn, That whereas, as one of Mr. Johnson's men depose, that this deponent said, that Dobby and Goodwin told him, that they bought ten kine to give to my lord treasurer for a bribe, he utterly upon his oath denieth the same. That Mr. Johnson, at Candlemas last, sent to him, and desired him to tell him, if he could, for whom the kine were bought: he answered, he heard they bought them to send to Theobald's, [the lord treasurer's house,] to Mr. Stileman. To which Mr. Johnson replied, I can have no law; but I hope, said he, ere long to bring the copyholders about: but if that which is done were to do again, I would never do it. I would rather lie in prison.

Another sworn, That Dobby would have bought kine of him, which he proposed, as he said, to send to Mr. Stileman. And was afterwards urged by Savyl to tell him for whom the kine were bought: the said Savyl saying, We hear they are bought for my lord; but would we could prove it. For the truth is, my master saith, he can have no law.

The lord treasurer to sir Will. Periam, chief baron: committing this matter to him.

After my very hearty commendations to your lordship, I have received from Mr. Irby the examination of certain tenants of Claxby, touching a false report made of me: by which examination it seemeth the poor man Dobby hath cleared himself; and that Johnson hath been the deviser of the slander. And for that Mr. Irby is able to inform your lordship of the particularities thereof, I desire you to hear

ANNO
1598.

him. And if upon due proof it shall appear that Johnson hath made this lewd report of me, or procured the same to be made by any others, that your lordship would let me understand the truth thereof, that he may be punished, as he well deserveth. The breviat of the examinations I send herein enclosed, and refer the rest to Mr. Irby's report. From my house in Westminster, the 27th of June, 1598.

Your very loving friend,

W. Burghley.

The lord baron's answer, having perused the depositions at large of the persons mentioned in this abstract or breviat:

"I find them to agree with the brief: and as it seemeth unto me, there is some fault in Mr. Johnson, but much more in Will. Savyl, his servant and bailiff: who hath behaved himself very lewdly herein.

"Wy. Periam."

This Johnson a little before was laid in the Fleet for some crime, perhaps relating to his farm of Clusby, held of the queen.

334

Number CCXLVIII.

From his
Life, MS. at
Burleigh-
house.

The lord Burghley, lord high treasurer of England, was born the 13th of September, 1521, and died the 4th of August, 1598: and was interred at Stanford, under a fair monument. The pious preface to his will, bearing date October 20, 1579, and revised afterwards, April 7, 1580, and June 1, 1580, and February 22, 1582, was as follows.

CONSIDERING by the goodness of Almighty God, I have been created a reasonable creature, and thereby ordained to serve him, and born of Christian parents, and christened in the name of the Father, of the Son, and the Holy Ghost; and consequently, brought up and instructed in my young years, in the knowledge of the gospel of our

ANNO
1595.

Saviour Jesus Christ; which was more clearly revealed in the times of my young years than it had been many years before; being thereby taught, that there was no other means for the salvation of my soul but by the death and resurrection of Christ the Son of God, wherein I do put my whole confidence and trust, and do desire the assistance of his holy Spirit to have grace to be thankful for the same, and to have a desire to obey his will and commandment, as far forth as the infirmity of my flesh will suffer, in living religiously and virtuously; whereunto adding the inevitable certainty of the death of my body, though I am uncertain of the time; and yet by the increase of time, and infirmities of my body, necessarily induced to look shortly by order of nature for my worldly end; and that whatsoever worldly goods God hath given, or rather lent unto me, I do certainly know that by death I must leave them all to the world; and that whatsoever godly and spiritual graces and gifts hath been by God's special grace bestow'd upon me, I hope certainly by God's goodness and mercy, though my body shall be committed to earth, yet to enjoy the fruits thereof in heaven, after this mortal life, if I shall use and dispose them in this life to God's glory; acknowledging them to have proceeded of his mere goodness, and that more plenteously than to many others.

Upon all these, and many other like considerations, I being at this present time occupied with the cogitations of my mortality, and yet of whole mind and memory, (for which I humbly thank Almighty God,) do determine, as many times heretofore I have done, to declare my last will and testament in writing, concerning the disposition of my lands and goods, which are worldly; what my mind is therein, and to whom I will and desire that the same shall remain after my decease, in such sort as by the laws of the realm I may, and as I hope shall not offend God, the giver of them all to me: considering, as it is in the Psalm, *Caelum caeli Domino, terram dedit filiis hominum.* And therefore first, this 20th day of October, in the year of our Lord 1579,

ANNO
1598.

and of queen Elizabeth the 22d, I do revoke all my former wills in writing, which are many, and do mean that none shall, from this time forward, be of any force, but this now written, and that which shall from time to time be added hereunto.

335

Number CCXLIX.

August the 3d, 1593. Oratio expirantis Domini. So is the title of the prayer, made by Mr. Thompson, the lord treasurer's chaplain, the night before he died.

O GOD of heaven, father of spirits, thou founder and restorer of mortality and immortality, open thine ears at this time to our humble requests, and favour the deep sighs and last prayers of us sinful men, for this thy true and faithful servant, our honourable lord and master, so deeply stricken, and so grievously wounded with the arrows of sickness, and the terror of death, that the venom thereof hath drunk up his spirits, and so utterly consumed him, that he refuseth all hope but in thy protection, and will not have any rest but under the shadow of thy wings. Look down, O Lord, from heaven upon him, with the eye of thy pity and compassion in this his last extremity. Let the saving beams of thy mercy shine upon him in this day of his redemption. Assuage the fury of his sickness with the joyful remembrance and present hope of a better life at hand: support his weakness with thy right hand, and assist him now and evermore with thy blessed Spirit, which is his only comfort in the hour of death.

And because the day of his death is the day of his judgment, and the hour of his dissolution the entrance into another estate, grant him, O Lord, grant him a joyful passage from death to life. Forgive him, O Father of mercies, forgive him all that is amiss. Wash away his sins in the blood of the unspotted lamb, Christ Jesus, his redeemer. Let his obedience take away the guilt of his sin. O! let the day

of his death in this world be the day of his nativity in the world to come; and the hour of his dissolution here be the full fruition of thy glorious presence in heaven.

Lord, look upon him in thy Son Christ Jesus. Cover his nakedness with the robe of his innocency, that so he may be without spot. Release him out of these grievous bonds, if it be thy heavenly pleasure, wherewith he is tied, that this mortal may be swallowed up of life. Receive him to mercy, whom thou hast most mercifully this long time preserved. Open him the gate of life, that in thy righteousness he may enter in. And as thou hast satisfied him with long life and fulness of years here on earth, and brought him to great honour in the eyes of his prince and country, so give him now, O Lord, eternity and length of days at thy right hand, and the desire of his heart in the world to come, and translate him out of this vale of misery, wherein he hath long groaned and sighed, to the kingdom of thy blessed Son Christ Jesus. Give him full possession of that heavenly city which thou hast purchased and promised; to which he hath travailed all the days of his pilgrimage. And since on earth thou hast granted and favoured him many years above others, for the glory of thy name, and the government of thy people, so now in his death make him a fixed star of light in the firmament of thy glory, to shine among thy chosen saints in heaven for evermore.

Leave his body to the earth, from whence it came, there 336 to rest, in assured hope of restitution; but his soul, O Lord, the work of thy hands, created to joy and eternity, redeemed to glory and immortality, let it with eagle's wings fly up to heaven, from whence it came, and be carried by the hands of angels into the bosom of Abraham, the father of faithful men, there to be kept blameless and unspotted, until the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ in the clouds. For he knoweth, O Lord, for he knoweth, and we all here confess before thee, that though his strength be dried up like a pottsherd, and his kidneys appear within his body; and though his body be brought into the dust of death, and lodge in the land of forgetfulness, yet his Redeemer liveth as a faith-

ANNO
1598.

ful witness in heaven, that will never shrink, but that one day he shall redeem him. For with his own eyes he and no others shall behold his dear Saviour Christ, coming in the clouds to judgment, with thousands of angels: and that in soul and body he shall be made a joyful heir of the kingdom of bliss, there to live for ever with God and the Lamb Christ Jesus, to enjoy all the blessings of the kingdom of God in a better life. For which graces we bow the knees of our hearts, and lift up the eyes of faith, praying, as thou, Lord, hast taught us in thy gospel, *Our Father, which art, &c.*

Number CCL.

Of this great statesman and counsellor, Will. Lambard, that great antiquarian, gave this short character to his son, sir Robert Cecill, in his epistle dedicatory before his learned book Archion, in his commentary upon the high courts of justice, in these words:

THAT as he was already by nature his son, so, he prayed, that he might at the length, by imitation, become the very heir of that renowned Nestor, and only Atlas of the English country and commonwealth.

Number CCLI.

Another writer, that translated the history of France out of French, about the latter end of queen Elizabeth's reign, in his dedication thus styled the said lord Burghley.

THE ancient counsellor of Europe, *pater patriæ*, pillar of the state. Through whose prudent policy and careful watchings that may justly be applied, *Necque periculum in rep. fuit gravius unquam, nec majus otium.*

Number CCLII.

'ANNO

1598.

A large Latin inscription upon a fair monument of this nobleman: composed by himself soon after the deaths of³³⁷ the countess of Oxford, his daughter, and his own lady.

SI quaeratur quis sit hic vir senex, genua flectens, canitie venerabilis, toga parliamentaria amictus, ordinis garteriani eques: quæ etiam sunt illæ duæ feminae nobiles, splendide stolatæ: quique sunt ad earum capita et pedes genibus nixi; ex sequenti sermone senis, et ex inscriptionibus cuique subjectis, hæc omnia intelliget.

Illæ cujus imago est infima, fuit, heu! fuit mea MILDREDA uxor longe clarissima. Altera fuit ANNA, mea filia dilectissima.

MILDREDA vero uxor mea ab anno Dom. 1546. vixit mecum perpetuo ad annos 43 conjunctissime, fuitque particeps omnium fortunarum mearum, temporibus et secundis et adversis, regnantibus regibus, Henrico Octavo, Edwardo Sexto, reginisque Maria, et Elizabetha, jam felicia sceptrā tenente. Peperitque mihi multos liberos, sed ad maturam ætatem tantum tres pervenerunt; nempe duæ filiæ, Anna et Elizabetha, ac filius unus, Robertus: Anna autem filia mea semper fuit mihi in deliciis, atque in matrimonium data Edwardo Veero, illustriss. comiti OXONIE, dno. magno camerario Angliæ. Ex eoque fit comitissa Oxon. Peperitque viro suo, præter aliquos liberos, non diu superstites, filias tres, adhuc vivas; quarum imagines visuntur genua flectentes, ad caput matris. Prior est dna. Elizabetha: secunda est dna. Brigitta: tertia dna. Susanna. Vixit illa filia mea Anna a teneris annis, multa cum laude semper apud omnes, tam in aula, quam domi, tam virgo valde pia et pudica, quam uxor vere casta suo viro: tandem magno mœrore meo ac matris, nobis prærepta; spiritumque reddidit Deo, qui illum dedit. Cujus corpus, et animam post Deo redditam, ego et uxor mea multis cum lachrymis, sub hac mola lapidea reponi curavimus.

Non multo autem post sequitur mater filiam; de qua quanquam nunquam sine lachryinis serio cogito, aliqua ta-

ANNO
1598.

men occurrunt, quæ mærorem meum paululum lenire videntur; nempe cum in memoriam repeto, quomodo per totam vitam versata sit in sacrarum literarum et sanctorum virorum scriptis, cisque maxime Græcis, ut Basili Magni, Chrysostomi, Gregorii Nazianzeni, ac aliorum similium. Maxime autem consolatur, (quod quidem jam post mortem omnibus magis patet, quam cum viveret,) recordari quanta beneficia secreto in doctos, quantasque eleemosynas in pauperes contulerit.

Quomodo etiam collegia in utrisque academiis donariis ornaverit, ad sustentationem scholarum redditibus perpetuis, præsertim collegium D. Johannis evangelistæ Cantab. dotaverit: de egenis etiam fovendis in villa Romfordiæ, unde ortum familiæ habuit, et Chestoniæ, ubi ædes nostræ sitæ sunt, curam magnam habuit. Ita ut singulis primis sabbatis omnium mensium et comineatus et pecuniam perpetuo pauperibus, maximeque viduis et orphanis Chestoniæ
338 degentibus, et ad frequentes conciones verbi Dei ibi habendas, distribui curaverit: ac in utrisque eisdem villis pauperibus mechanicis perpetuis temporibus singulis bienniis pecuniarum bonam summam utendam, distribui ordinaverit.

Post ista autem multaque alia ejus generis præstita officia, et Deo et patriæ, mihiq; conjugii, ac liberis suis, doctisque et pauperibus, sponte in anno suo climacterico, viz. LXIII. spiritum reddidit Deo, quarto Aprilis anno 1589. Cujus corpus ego maritus et pater adjungendum duxi corpori filiæ nostræ ANNÆ, paulo ante sub isto lapide repositæ. Ut conjunctæ reservarentur ad spem resurrectionis.

Ecce adhuc quatuor alios viventes, ROBERTUM meum unicum ex Mildreda filium ac pedes matris, ac tres alias virgines, dniam. Elizabetham, dniam. Brigittam, ac dniam. Susannam, ANNÆ meæ tres filias, ad capita matris, et aviæ, genibus incumbentes.

Sed quo pergo? Finem et loquendi et plorandi faciam. Solumque hoc affirmo, spectaculum hoc mihi tam plenum esse doloris, ut quanquam aliquam mixtam consolationem offerant hi relictæ mihi optinæ spei dulces liberi; tamen ne-

que hi quatuor valde mihi chari, neque dilectus filius meus ANNO
1593.
major natu THOMAS CECILIUS eques auratus, neque omnes
qui ex eo prognati sunt, ac jam vivunt, nepotes ac neptes,
numero undecim, cui etiam jungo puerulum suavem Gulielmum PAULET Luciae Ceciliae, neptis meae filium ex Gul.
Paulet marchionis WINTON, filio ac herede, unquam dolorem meum huic spectaculo adhærentem, deleturi sunt.

Hic infra meis oculis lachrymis suffusis, animoque maximo maiore oppresso, apparent imagines duarum illustrium feminarum, quæ dum vixerant fuerant mihi, super omne genus humanum, longe charissimæ.

ANNA comitissa OXON. filia Gulielmi Cecillii, baronis de Burghley, nata est quinto Decembris, anno Dom. 1556. Uxor fuit EDWARDI VERI, illustriss. comit. Oxon. anno ætatis suæ 15. Ex cuius connubio mater fuit plurimum liberorum, sed reliquit tantum tres filias virgines superstites, dnæ. Elizabetham Vere, ætate jam 14, dnæ. Brigitam Vere, ætate 5 annorum, tertiam infantulam, dnæ. Susanam. Vixit hæc Anna virgo semper pudica et casta, uxor erga virum in amando mire constans, filia in parentes per omnia obsequens, in colendo Deo valde diligens et devota; febre ardente correpta, certa spe regni cælestis spiritum ultimum cum anima ardentis. precibus Deo, et Creatori et Redemptori suo, reddidit, quinto Junii anno Dom. 1588. in palatio reginæ Elizabethæ Grenwici.

ROBERTUS CECILIUS filius Gulielmi dni. de Burghley, et Mildredæ dnæ. de Burghley, natus est primo Junii, anno Dom. 1563. parum ante matris obitum, ambiebat, conscia matre, nobilem virginem dnæ. Elizabetham Brook in privato cubiculo reginæ inservientem, filiam præclari baronis regni W. dom. de COBHAM, eamque post mortem matris, consensu patris, in uxorem duxit ultimo Augusti anno Dom. 1589. Memoriam hic colit magno cum dolore piissimæ matris, et chariss. sororis; agnoscitque patrem jam grandævum omni obsequio, sibi charissimum. In quo si permanebit dies sui prolongentur super terram, quam Dominus Deus dedit.

MILDREDA primogenita filia nobilis dni. ANTON. COCI,

ANNO 1598. equitis aurati, viri pii et insigniter docti, omniumque literarum Mecenatis optimi. Matrem habuit duam. Annam filiam dñi. Gulielmi FITZWILLIAMS, equitis aurati: utroque

339 parente propter eorum antiqua stemmata multis familiis magnatum hujus regni deducta, clara et nobilis. Sed propter eruditionem conjunctam cum constanti Christianæ religionis professione, et Latinae et Græcæ linguarum singularem cognitionem, quam solummodo a patre docente accepit, non minus clara, et ab omnibus doctis eximie laudata. Uxor anno ætatis suæ 20 fit dñi. Gulielmi Ceciliæ dñi. de Burghley, posteaque ratione viri titulo baronis regni nobilitati facta est baronissa de Burghley. Multos ei peperit filios; sed tres tantum, qui ad ætatem adultam pervenerunt; nimirum Annam, Robertum, et Elizabetham.

ANNA conjuncta fuit connubio Edw. comiti Oxoniæ, ut hic supra patet.

ROBERTUS jam vivit. Hic ad pedes matris ac sororis, genubus flexis.

ELIZABETHA moritur, statim a morte viri Gulielmi Wentworthi, primogeniti filii Tho. dno. Wentworth.

Ista pia dna. Burghleia vixit ad ætatem sexaginta trium annorum, multaue testimonia reliquit pietatis in Deum, charitatis in doctos et pauperes, quæ, dum vixerat, celavit sub aliorum virorum bonorum nominibus; quæ tamen coram Deo fuerunt tam cognita, etiam post vitam sine ullo dubio in cælis sibi certo reposita. Obiit vero supremum diem quarto die mensis Aprilis ann. Dom. 1589. in ædibus viri sui dom. Burghleii Westmonasterii.

Dna. Elizabetha Vere, filia illustriss. comitis Edwardi Oxon. et Annæ uxoris, filiaæ dñæ. de Burghley, nata 22 Junii ann. 1575. agitque annum 14. et dolet graviter, et non sine causa ob amissam aviam et matrem. Sed consolatur, quod sereniss. regina eam habet in cubiculo privato servientem.

Dna. Brigitta, secunda filia dicti comitis Oxon. et Annæ, nata sexto Aprilis anno 1584. et quanquam vix excessit annum quartum, cum matris corpus in sepulchrum reponeretur, tamen non absque lachrymis agnovit ereptam matrem,

et paulo post aviam. Verum non est relicta orphana, cum ANNO
habent patrem viventem et avum charissimum, tutorem ma- 1598.
xime sollicitum.

Dna. Susanna, tertia filia, nata 26 Maii anno 1587. Quæ per ætatem non potuit agnoscere aut aviam aut matrem, aviam solum jam agnoscit avum charissimum; qui omnium harum curam habet, ita ut nec pia educatione, nec congrua vivendi ratione, destituantur.

Number CCLIII.

340

*The lord Burghley's instructions to his son Robert Cecil,
when young.*

*This is printed, but from a vicious copy, but is corrected
from an original.*

Son Robert,

THE virtuous inclinations of thy matchless mother, by whose tender and godly care thy infancy was governed, together with thy education under so zealous and excellent a tutor, putteth me rather in assurance than hope, that thou art not ignorant of the *summum bonum*, which is only able to make thee happy, as well in thy death as life: I mean the true knowledge and worship of thy Creator and Redeemer; without which all other things are vain and miserable. So that thy youth being guided by so sufficient a tutor, I make no doubt but he will furnish thy life both with divine and moral documents. Yet, that I may not cease of the care beseeining a parent towards his child, or that thou shouldest have cause to derive thy whole felicity and welfare rather from another than from whom thou receivedst thy birth and being, I think it fit, and agreeable to the affection I bear thee, to help thee with such advertisements and rules for the forming of thy life, as are gained rather by long experience than much reading; to the end that thou, entering into this exorbitant age, mayest be the better prepared to shun those cautelous courses, whereunto this world and thy lack of experience may draw thee.

ANNO

1598.

And because I would not confound thy memory, I have reduced them into ten parts; and next unto Moses's tables (if thou imprint them in thy mind) thou shalt reap the benefit, and I the contentment. And these they are:

I. When it shall please God to bring thee to man's estate, use great providence and circumspection in the choice of a wife; for from thence will spring all thy future good or evil: and it is an action like a stratagem of war, wherein a man can err but once. If thy estate be good, match near home, and at leisure; if weak, far off and quickly. Inquire diligently of her disposition, and how her parents have been inclined in their youth. Let her not be poor, how generous soever; for a man can buy nothing in the market with gentility. Nor choose a base and uncomely creature, although for wealth; for it will cause contempt in others, and loathing in thee. Neither make choice of a dwarf or a fool: for by the one thou shalt beget a race of pigmies: the other will be thy daily disgrace, and it will irk thee to hear her talk; and thou shalt find to thy grief, that there is nothing more fulsome than a she-fool.

And touching the government of thy house, let thy hospitality be moderate, and according to the measure of thy estate; rather plentiful than sparing, but not costly. For I never knew any growing poor by keeping an orderly table: but some consume themselves through secret visits, and
 341 then hospitality beareth the blame. But banish swinish drunkenness out of thy house: which is a vice which impaireth health, consumeth much, and maketh no show. And I never heard praise ascribed to a drunkard, but the well-bearing of his liquor; which is a better commendation for a brewer's horse or a carrion, than either for a gentleman or serving-man. And beware to spend not above a third of the four parts of thy living, nor above a third part of that in thy house; for the other two parts will do no more than defray thy extraordinaries, which will always surmount thine ordinaries by far: otherwise thou shalt live like a rich beggar, in continual want. And the needy man can never live happy nor contented; for every least disaster makes him

ready to mortgage or sell. And the gentlemen that sell an acre of land sell an ounce of credit; for gentility is nothing but ancient riches: for that if the foundation sink, the building must needs follow.

ANNO
1598.

II. Bring thy children up in learning and obedience, yet without austerity. Praise them openly, reprehend them secretly. Give them a good countenance, and a sufficient maintenance according to thy ability: otherwise thy life will seem their bondage; and what portion thou shalt leave them at thy death, they will thank death for it, not thee. And I am persuaded, that the foolish cockering of some parents, and the over-stern carriage of others, causeth more men and women to take ill courses, than their own natural inclinations. Marry thy daughters in time, lest they marry themselves. And suffer not thy sons to pass the Alps: for they shall learn nothing there but pride, blasphemy, and atheism. And if by travel they get a few broken languages, they will profit them not more, than to have meat served in divers dishes. Neither by my consent shalt thou train them up to the wars. For he that setteth up his rest to live by that profession can hardly be an honest man or good Christian: for every war is of itself unjust, unless the cause make it just. Besides, it is a science no longer in request than in use: soldiers in peace are like chimneys in summer.

III. Live not in the country without corn and cattle about thee: for he that puts his hand to purse for every expense of household, is like him that thinks to keep water in a sieve. And what provision thou shalt want, lay to buy it at the best hand: for there is one penny in four saved, between buying at thy need, and when the markets and seasons do serve fitly for it. And be not served with kinsmen, friends, or men entreated to stay; for they will expect much, and do little: nor with such as are amorous; for their heads are always intoxicated. And keep rather two too few than one too many. Feed them well, and pay them with the most; and then thou mayest boldly require service and duty at their hands.

ANNO
1598.

IV. Let thy kindred and allies be welcome to thy table. Grace them with thy countenance, and further them in all other honest actions: for by this means thou shalt so double the bond of nature, as thou shalt find them so many advocates to plead an apology for thee behind thy back. But shake off those glowworms, I mean those parasites and
342 sycophants, who will feed and fawn upon thee in the summer of thy prosperity, but in adverse storms they will shelter thee no more than an harbour in winter.

V. Beware of suretyship for the best friends: for he that payeth another man's debts seeks his own decay. But if thou canst not otherwise choose, rather lend thy money thyself upon good bands, though thou borrow it: so shalt thou both pleasure thy friend, and secure thyself. Neither borrow money of a friend; but of a mere stranger, where paying for it thou shalt hear of it no more: otherwise thou shalt eclipse thy credit, lose thy friend, and yet pay as dear as to another. But in borrowing money be precious of thy word: for he that hath care to keep days of payment is lord of other men's goods.

VI. Take no suit against a poor man, without receiving much wrong: for besides thou makest him thy competitor, it is a base conquest to triumph where there is small resistance. Neither attempt law against a man before thou be thoroughly resolved that thou hast right on thy side; and then spare neither for money nor pains: for a cause or two so followed, and obtained, will free thee from suits a great part of thy life.

VII. Be sure to keep some great man thy friend; but trouble him not for trifles. Compliment him often. Present him with many, yet small gifts, and of little charge. And if thou have cause to bestow any great gratuity, let it be some such thing as may be daily in his sight. Otherwise, in this ambitious age, thou shalt remain as a hoop without a pole, live in obscurity, and be made a football for every insulung companion.

VIII. Towards thy superiors be humble, yet generous: with thy equals familiar, yet respective: towards thy infe-

ANNO
1598.

IV. Let thy kindred and allies be welcome to thy table. Grace them with thy countenance, and further them in all other honest actions: for by this means thou shalt so double the bond of nature, as thou shalt find them so many advocates to plead an apology for thee behind thy back. But shake off those glowworms, I mean those parasites and
342 sycophants, who will feed and fawn upon thee in the summer of thy prosperity, but in adverse storms they will shelter thee no more than an harbour in winter.

V. Beware of suretyship for the best friends: for he that payeth another man's debts seeks his own decay. But if thou canst not otherwise choose, rather lend thy money thyself upon good bands, though thou borrow it: so shalt thou both pleasure thy friend, and secure thyself. Neither borrow money of a friend; but of a mere stranger, where paying for it thou shalt hear of it no more: otherwise thou shalt eclipse thy credit, lose thy friend, and yet pay as dear as to another. But in borrowing money be precious of thy word: for he that hath care to keep days of payment is lord of other men's goods.

VI. Take no suit against a poor man, without receiving much wrong: for besides thou makest him thy competitor, it is a base conquest to triumph where there is small resistance. Neither attempt law against a man before thou be thoroughly resolved that thou hast right on thy side; and then spare neither for money nor pains: for a cause or two so followed, and obtained, will free thee from suits a great part of thy life.

VII. Be sure to keep some great man thy friend; but trouble him not for trifles. Compliment him often. Present him with many, yet small gifts, and of little charge. And if thou have cause to bestow any great gratuity, let it be some such thing as may be daily in his sight. Otherwise, in this ambitious age, thou shalt remain as a hoop without a pole, live in obscurity, and be made a football for every insulting companion.

VIII. Towards thy superiors be humble, yet generous: with thy equals familiar, yet respective: towards thy infe-

riors shew much humility, and some familiarity; as, to bow thy body, stretch forth thy hand, and uncover thy head, and such like popular compliments. The first prepares way to thy advancement: the second makes thee known for a man well bred: the third gains a good report; which once gotten is easily kept. For high humility taketh such deep root in the minds of the mighty, as they are easier won by unprofitable courtesies than churlish benefits. Yet I advise thee not to affect or neglect popularity too much. Seek not to be C. and then to be R.

ANNO
1598.

IX. Trust not any with thy life, credit, or estate: for it is mere folly for a man to entrail himself to his friend; as though, occasion being offered, he shall not dare to become his enemy.

X. Be not scurrilous in thy conversation, nor satirical in thy jests: the one will make thee unwelcome in all company; and the other will pull on quarrels, and get thee hated of thy best friends. For sulphurous jests, when they savour too much of truth, leave a bitterness in the minds of those that are touched. And although I have already pointed at this inclusive, yet I think it necessary to leave it to thee as a special caution, because I have seen many so prone to quip and gird, as they would rather lose their friend than their jest. And if by chance their boiling brains yield any quaint scoff, they will travail to be delivered of it, as a woman with child. These nimble apprehensions are but the froths of wit.

Number CCLIV.

343

Lord Burghley to his son, sir Robert Cecil. Superscribed,
To my very loving son, sir Robert Cecil, kn. principal secretary.

Thus endorsed: Xmo. Julii. My lord's last letter that ever he [the lord Burghley] wrote with his own hand.

THOUGH I know you count it your duty in nature so continually to shew you careful of my state of health, yet

ANNO
1598.

were I also unnatural, if I should not take comfort thereby, and to beseech Almighty God to bless you with supply of such blessings as I cannot in this infirmity yield you.

Only I pray you diligently and effectually let her majesty understand, how her singular kindness doth overcome my power to acquit it; who, although she will not be a mother, yet she sheweth herself, by feeding me with her own princely hand, as a careful nurse. And if I may be weaned to feed myself, I shall be more ready to serve her on the earth: if not, I hope to be in heaven a servitor for her and God's church. And so I thank you for your partriches.

Serve God by serving of the queen: for all other service is indeed bondage to the Devil.

10 Jul. 1598.

Your languishing father,

[So dated in the original.]

W. Burghley.

This was transcribed from a volume of original letters of the lord Burghley to his son, sir Robert Cecil, remaining among the MSS. of Dr. More, late lord bishop of Ely, now in the Cambridge library.

Number CCLV.

Matthew bishop of Durham to the lord treasurer Burghley: concerning his apprehending the lady Katharine Gray, widow, one of the daughters of the earl of Westmerland; and other harbourers of popish priests in those northern parts.

Rt. honourable,

MAY it please your good lordship to be advertised, that I have lately caused the lady Katharine Gray, widow, one of Westmerland's daughters, to be apprehended by Mr. 344 John Conyers, the sheriff of this county, and Mr. Robert Tailbois, one of the justices of peace; and have committed her to the safe custody of Christopher Glover, gaoler of Durham castle, to be kept forthcoming in his private house, not in the gaol. This lady was many years sought

ANNO
1598.

by the late earl of Huntington, [late lord president of the council in the north,] and was detected for the receiving and relieving of sundry seminary priests; as Stafferton, with the flesh-mark on his face, (with whose too much familiarity she hath been touched in honour;) Bost, who since was executed; Musske and Pattison; besides some others, whose names come not presently to mind. She hath always illuded the processes and messengers of the ecclesiastical high commission, by eloigning, and withdrawing herself hitherto from all appearance. Of late time, sometime since Martlemas last, she took to farm a house and land, called Grencroft, nigh Lanchester in this county, eight miles hence north and by west, let unto her by Mrs. Hall, a widow, conformable, and sister to Nicholas Tempest, wife of Stella, that great recusant: where the lady hath been coming and going ever since; and sometime made good cheer to twenty of her friends at once, specially at Christmas; and where, if I be truly informed, there was bad rule kept, (both spiritually and carnally.) Within half a mile of that house, on this side Lanchester, dwelleth at the manor house one William Hodgson, an old servant and follower of the earl; whose son, called John, is a special recusant, and is reported (but how certainly I cannot say) to have married this lady.

This William Hodgson is a perilous fellow, conformable to all her majesty's proceedings, and farmour to her highness of the whole deanery of Lanchester dissolved, worth, as it is said, some 200 ma. or better, above the yearly rent. In Lancheston town dwelleth Lancelot Hodgson, when he is at home, but he is now in prison for recusancy; a dangerous person, and not unlearned: who the last year was married, as himself confesseth, by an old popish priest, (but no seminarist, nor at a mass, as he allegeth,) to Mary Lee, daughter to another of the earl's chief old servants and officers at Brancepeth in these days.

The manor of Lanchester belonging to me, and Brancepeth lordship to her majesty by the earl's attainder, do adjoin together; and therefore I think the lady Gray did

ANNO
1598.

there mean for the time to set up her rest, so nigh her father's old tenants: the house also itself standing towards the fells, [hills,] and nigh a pretty wood, strongly built of new, and with many shifting conveyances, may yield good opportunity to entertain and lodge, not only old ill guests, but percase the earl himself, *si et quatenus*.....

Now she is in hand, I would by your lordship be directed with some expedition, how she shall be dealt with and used; whether detained in durance, or bailed upon good bonds for her appearance from time to time. 2. Whether she shall be touched only for recusancy, or charged with any other matter that may occur. 3. Whether any thing amounting to felony, &c. shall arise against her, she shall be tried thereof at the next assizes here, or at Northumberland, as her sister the lady Margaret was, anno 1593, and by her majesty most graciously pardoned, in hope of the continu-
345 ance of her pretended conformity: from the which, I hear, she is relapsed since. 4. Whether she shall be suffered to keep house of herself with some of her own servants about her, and her friends sometime resorting to her, as she desireth earnestly; or live as her keeper shall provide for her in a more private and close manner. 5. Whether she shall be permitted to ride abroad and take the air, or continue within her lodging. 6. Such other particulars as your lordship in your wisdom shall think fit to impart unto me.

My health will not yet serve me, either to send for her or to go unto her; but at the time of my visitation, about a fortnight hence, or eighteen days, I shall take occasion to speak with her, and examine her, if your lordship before that time shall so advise me, and if God will give me leave. The while, with humble thanks unto your good lordship for the allowance of my impost, I betake your lordship to the grace of God. At B. Aukland, the 27th of May, 1598.

Your lordship's most humble in Christ,
Tobie Duresm.

Number CCLVI.

ANNO
1593.

Regin. Elizab. ann. 35. A warrant to the lord keeper Puckring, [a rough draught, corrected with some additions, by the lord treasurer's hand,] to grant commissions for visiting hospitals, almshouses, colleges, &c.; the revenues having been abused and swallowed up by evil men. The effect, as it seems, of that statesman's former speech to the queen, in the year 1594. 346

ELIZABETH, &c. by the grace of God, &c. To our trusty and well beloved counsellor sir John Puckring. knt. lord keeper of our great seal of England, greeting. Forasmuch as we are credibly informed, that many colleges, hospitals, and almshouses, and other rooms and places within this our realm, which have been founded and ordained, some of them by us and our progenitors, some of them by divers other godly and well-disposed persons, for the charitable relief of poor, aged, and impotent people, are of late years greatly decayed and impoverished; and that the possessions and revenues thereof, and divers lands, tenements, and hereditaments, leases, sums of money, goods, and chattels, which have been given, assigned, and appointed to and for other the like good and charitable uses, are most unlawfully and uncharitably converted to the private lucre and gain of some few greedy and covetous persons, contrary to the godly intent and meaning of the founders and givers thereof, and to the great offence of Almighty God: and being moved with a most godly zeal to have all such poor, aged, and impotent people, and especially soldiers and mariners, and other our good subjects, which have been or may be hurt or maimed in the wars for the maintenance of God's true religion, and for the defence of us and their native country, to be godly and charitably provided for, relieved, and maintained; and having a princely care and regard to have all such colleges, hospitals, and almshouses, and all lands, tenements, rents, revenues, leases, sums of money, and goods and chattels whatsoever within this our realm, as have been founded, ordained, given, or appointed

ANNO

1598.

to or for any such godly and charitable use and purpose, to be ordered, disposed, used, and employed according to the true intent and meaning of the founders and givers; and all such enormities and abuses as have been committed or suffered for or touching the same, to be with all convenient speed corrected or reformed:

We do therefore will and authorize you, by virtue hereof, from time to time, and at all times hereafter, when and as often as you shall think it requisite and convenient, to direct forthwith, under our great seal of England, such and so many commissions, as have been devised by you and our learned council, to such persons, and into such countries, cities, towns, and places, as in your wisdom and discretion you shall think meet, with the advice of our privy-council, or of any six of them, whereof our treasurer of England, or
 347 our admiral of England, to be always one, for the acquiring and searching, doing and executing of all such matters and things whatsoever, touching or concerning the premises, or any of them, as in the same commission, and in certain articles, accorded on by our privy-council, to be thereunto annexed, shall be contained and appointed, and in such order, manner, and form, as you shall in that behalf suppose most fit and convenient for the accomplishment of our pleasure and intent concerning the same, as aforesaid: commanding by our said commission, that return be made of their doings into our chancery without any unnecessary delay, &c. In the 35th year of our reign.

Examined by Tho. Egerton, [attorney-general.]

Number CCLVII.

ANNO
1598.

A remark upon this statesman, who was principal secretary of state in king Edward's reign; upon a consultation at that king's decease of altering the succession to the crown, and advancing the lady Jane Gray thereunto. Being a private letter to that lord by Roger Alford, one of his chief servants in the office of secretary in king Edward's reign. Writ on the said lord's desire. Which letter is thus endorsed by lord Burghley's own hand: Oct. 4, 1573. Roger Alford, concerning his knowledge of the times, 1553. Cott. Library. Titus, B. 2.

To my very honourable good lord, the lord treasurer.

AFTER my humble remembrance of duty to your lordship, it may please the same to understand, that upon my return out of Cambridgeshire to Hitcham, upon Wednesday last at night, I received your letter, sent to me enclosed in a letter of Mr. Mitchel's [his lordship's secretary] the Friday before; whereby you require mine answer to the matter thereof, as particularly as I can: which as I do remember, I thought good to write from the beginning, choosing rather to write you more than you desire, than less than you would be remembered of.

I remember you first opened the matter to me covertly in Greenwich Park, by asking of me, what was reported of the marriage of the lord Guilford to the lady Jane, the duke of Suffolk's daughter; wherein you said, that the lady marquis of Northampton was then the greatest doer. This was even upon the marriage, which was concluded when king Edward was extremely sick of the sickness whereof he died. Wherein a few days after, you brake with me of a device of king Edward's, whereby the succession of the crown should be settled here: whereunto, as you then said, you were a mere stranger, and not of the council, but understood it secretly by your friend. Afterwards, in the chamber at Greenwich, you told me, that by devices among certain of the council, which you must use as one not knowing of

ANNO 1598. them, because they called you not to them, and they were not as then known, but to a very few of them. There was

348 a determination concluded, to make the said lady Jane queen: and said further, you thought, when the matter was more riper, it is like you should be called to it; but whatever became of you, said you, you would never partake of that device.

This matter resting in consultation, you went to London by water divers nights oftener than you accustomed, and appointed yourself, to my thinking, as one that stood in awe of violence to be offered to you; for you went weaponed, which you had not used before. At this time of misliking, you refrained also your ordinary going to council, except you were sent for. And one afternoon, when you looked to be sent for, to be moved in this matter, you laid out certain books in gay order for your night gear; supposing they would have committed you. That afternoon you went up to council: and at your return, you said nothing was done in that matter. Hereupon I went to London by your appointment, and conveyed such money and plate that you had, together with your evidences, out of your house; for that you stood in some doubt, whether it were better for you to fly, or to submit yourself to their courtesy, and reject this trouble: you said, you thought you should not be called at all. I remember also, you told me at that time, that Mr. Gosnald and Justice Hales would not consent to it; and that the judges, at that time, in their device of the instrument by reason of the statute made, that whosoever by overt deed or act, &c. was *ipso facto* a traitor, told the king he might do what he listed, but if any of them set their pen to devise the instrument, he was *ipso facto* traitor: which made a pause for that time.

Hereupon the judges referred the further consultation, devised pardons. In telling of which device to me, you seemed marvellously to dislike them for their device; saying further, that if they had held them in their first opinion, they had stayed it. Afterward they changed that device,

and said, there was no treason to the king's successor living the king himself, whom they need not doubt. And so the pardon stayed, being then making out. ANNO
1598.

This matter being brought thus far, and you thinking then that your misliking was discovered, and that your consent would not have been required at all, was yet sent for to council, when the duke of Northumberland was present: where, after others had ordinarily set their hands, you were called on (as after you told by the old earl of Shrewsbury, and after by others, the said duke present saying nothing) to put yours. And after the declaration of causes which moved you not to agree thereto, you were respected, without that hardness of dealing which you looked for at that time. Yet afterwards the matter thus proceeding, and the judges' opinions prevailing so far, (who together with Mr. Gosnold and all others required thereunto, had subscribed, saving yourself,) you told me, that being called for before the king, upon his commandment that you should subscribe his instrument, you answered it, that allowing it, as a counsellor you could not, for causes you shewed him. Whereupon as I remember also, he said, he willed you to subscribe as a witness, that it was his pleasure to have it so to pass: which you have no reason to deny. And so as the last man you subscribed.

After the king was dead, which they meant should not be known a fortnight after: yet the next day it was through the court. Wherefore they meant to proclaim the lady Jane queen out of hand; and that they would have had you to draw the same proclamation. But said you, they shall draw it who list. I have shifted from me to the king's attorney, or solicitor, to be sent for: for that it touched matter in law. And that being afterward thought to be too long a distract, it was devised, that sir John Throgmorton should draw it, as I think he did. Afterward also in the Tower you continued your misliking of the enterprise, and said it was against your conscience to meddle in it, whatsoever became of it. And so having before conveyed your writings, with such plate and money as you had, to one Mr. Nelson's

ANNO
1598.

house in London, and Sere's house, your servant, I took order, that for our escape, Nelson's house in Essex, within a mile of Thames at Alveley, should be also in a readiness, and my mother's house in London, with other.

I am here to remember you, that perceiving your mind to persevere thus, I moved you further to assure your land to Mr. Thomas your son; which you so did; using therein the advice of Mr. Walpole and Mr. Attorney that now is, which you afterwards declared to Mr. Gosnald, who misliked you therein; saying it would be construed as a thing done of a set will in you. After this, you shewed me in the Tower that you had a conference with the last lord treasurer; and withal shewed me out of your bosom a letter of credit of his to my lord marquis of Winchester, that now is, his son, to credit you, and to follow your devices and directions. And for the better execution of this your determination, I kept in store certain blank passports, before in my custody, where the council's hand was already set; for that the despatches then were quick, to escape more surer.

I remember further at that time of a wrote postscript in a letter of the council's to the duke, whereby was signified to him the revolt of Bethal and others with the navy to the late queen, that your horsemen, which should have gone to the aid, were impeached by John Villers, because you meant not to give any aid at all to their so much misliked enterprise. And at that time you remembered all to me that the late earl of Bedford was broken withal, as a misliker of that device, and sir Will. Peter also. And Roper Mellye, then his secretary, told me then, that he had conveyed his lordship's money, &c. out of the Tower, and thought his lord would go quickly after. After this, the lords not long after agreed to go to Baynard's castle, to the lord of Pembroke, upon pretence before in council, to give audience to the French king's and emperor's ambassadors. that had been long delayed audience, and that the Tower was not fit to him to enter into at that season. At which time my lord of Arundel, upon some overture of frank speech to be had in council in respect of that present state, said secretly to

ANNO
1598.

his friend (as I take it, yourself or sir Will. Peter) that he liked not that air. And thereupon it was deferred to Baynard's castle. From which place the lords went and proclaimed queen Mary. And yourself was despatched after my lord of Arundel and my lord Paget to her grace, being at Ipswich; where being sent by you thither a little before, my lady Bacon told me, that the queen thought very well of her brother Cicil, [viz. sir William Cicil,] and said, you were a very honest man. Marry, there was a letter of late, written from the council to the duke, intercepted, whereby it appeared you had armed horsemen against her, but that they were impeached by Northamptonshire men, which had done you much hurt. Whereupon, being privy to the matter before, I laughed, and told her the matter.

At your coming to Newhall you exhibited your submission to her majesty: wherein you repeated your whole actions in that case: which I wrote. Upon the delivery whereof you kissed her hand at sir Will. Peter's house at Ingerstone, before any other of the council-men. And I am to remember you further, that Mr. Cheke answered queen Mary's letter, sent by Hungate to the council; for that you shifted as you could all dealing in those matters; and said, if Hungate had taken a good time to deliver his letter, you thought the council would have taken her offer. This all for this present. From Hitchin, the 4th of October, anno 1573.

Your lordship's ever to command,

Roger Alford.

You have the copy of your submission: wherein your whole dealing therein is remembered. If not, I think if Mr. Fothergil, who had the keeping of the council-chest at that time, were spoken to, he would find it among the council-matters at that time.

ANNO
1598.

Number CCLVIII.

Anno Elizab. 40. 1598. regia autoritate fuit convocatio.

From notes taken by one of the ministers of London, then present. Ex MSS. D. Joh. D. episc. Ely. In which convocation these canons were made and printed.

1. UT homines idonei ad sacros ordines admittantur.
 2. De beneficiorum pluralitate cohibenda.
 3. De curatis, ut hospitalitatem exerceant.
 4. Ut decani et prebendarii conciones habeant.
 5. De moderatione indulgentiarum matrimonii.
 6. De sententiis divortii non temere ferendis.
 7. Circa excommunicationem reformandam.
 8. De recusantibus et aliis publice denunciandis.
 9. De commutatione pœnitentiæ.
 10. De officiariis ecclesiasticis et eorum ministris ratificatio.
 11. De excessibus apparitorum numeror.
 12. De libris, registro, matrimonio, baptismo, sepultura.
- Quod fiant in pergamento.

351

Number CCLIX.

Martin Heton, D. D. was preferred to the see of Ely this year 1599. vacant from the year 1581. when Cox the last bishop deceased, being about nineteen years. He was consecrated Feb. 3. Of whose family, studies, and preferment, and death, the rev. Mr. Heton of Buntingford gave this account.

Anno 1599. HE was the son of George Heton, esq. of Heton hall, in the township or hamlet of Heton, in the parish of Dean in the county of Lancaster, the ancient seat of that family for many centuries, and where it still remains. His mother was Joanna, the daughter of sir Martin Bowes; who was lord mayor of London in the year 1545. He was bred up at Westminster: thence went to Christ Church in Oxford, 1571, and was made student there: was M. A. 1578: one

of the canons 1582; and vice-chancellor 1588: dean of Winchester 1589, being but thirty-six years of age. And in the latter end of 1599. Feb. 3. he was by queen Elizabeth preferred to the bishopric of Ely; where he sat nine years and six months; being very famous for his good preaching and great hospitality: and died at Mildenhall in Suffolk, July the 14th, 1609. of the age of fifty-seven; and was buried in Ely Minster: where his two daughters (the one of them married to sir Robert Filmer, of Sutton in Kent, bart. the other to sir Edward Fish, bart. of Bedfordshire) erected a monument to his memory; which is one of the finest in that cathedral; though it hath in some measure shared in the violence of the great rebellion.

ANNO
1599.

The epitaph upon bishop Heton's monument.

M. S.

Martinus Heton ex antiquæ Hetonorum familia in agro Lancastrensi oriundus. Filius Georgii Heton armigeri, et Johanne ejus uxoris, filiae Martini Bowes equitis aurati. A qua parturiente et expirante Deo et ecclesiæ reformatæ dicatus est.

Ab academia Oxoniensi ad omnes scholasticos gradus, et honores erectus. Ibi in Sede Christi unus octo canonicorum constitutus. A serenissima regina Elizabetha ad decanatum Winton. annum jam agens trigesimum sextum promotus, hujus episcopatus ultimo locum et sedem obtinuit. Consecratus Feb. 3. anno Dom. MDXCIX. Per decem annos plus minus tam pie, tam publice, tam munifice hic se gessit in cathedra, ut

Qui communi voluntatum consensu, et amores et officia erga se excitasset, non sine dolore, non sine duplici damno abreptus esse videatur.

Obiit Julii 14. ann. Dom. MDCIX. ætatis LVII.

ANNO
1599.

Number CCLX.

352

Sir Robert Cotton's writings in Emanuel Demetrius the historian his album, remaining in the registers of the Dutch church in St. Augustin's Friars, London.

ABOVE is placed sir Robert's coat of arms in colours.

Libertatis amor, stultum cur decipis orbem?

Homines inquieti et turbulenti, nec ipsi quiescere possunt, nec alios quiescere sinunt. Et impliciti foederibus coguntur sequi alienos furores.

Nulla salus bello, pacem te poscimus omnes.

Then his coat of arms. And then follow these words:

Ornatissimo viro et amico integerrimo D. Emanueli Demetrio, Robertus Cotton hæc insignia sua gentilitia et nomen induraturæ amicitiae monumentum L. M. P. Londini, 8 Decemb. 1599.

Number CCLXI.

The queen's council to the lord mayor of London. In behalf of the strangers, Dutch and French, forbidden to exercise their trades in the city. Upon their petition to the queen.

AFTER our hearty commendations to your lordship. An humble petition hath been exhibited unto her majesty by divers poor strangers and handicraftsmen of the Dutch and French congregation in the city of London. Whereby they give her majesty to understand, that your lordship will enforce them either to enter into bond to forbear to work at all within the city, or else to commit them to prison. Her majesty therefore, understanding the course you mean to take with them, hath willed us to signify unto you, that her pleasure is, you should forbear to go forward in this your intention. And if there be any further matter known to your lordship, wherewith as yet we are unacquainted, that doth make you to take this strict course, then we pray you to certify the same hither unto us, that we may con-

sider of the same. And in the mean season to suffer them to use that favourable liberty, which hitherto they have enjoyed. And so we bid your lordship farewell. From the court at Greenwich, the 29th of April, 1599.

ANNO
1599.

Signed by the archbishop of Canterbury, the lord keeper, the lord admiral, lord North, lord Buckhurst, Mr. Comptroller, Mr. Secretary, and Mr. Chancellor of the Exchequer.

Directed to sir Stephen Some, knt. lord mayor of the city of London.

Number CCLXII.

353

To which letter is subjoined another, being of the same subject, though writ a year or two after.

Lord Buckhurst, lord high treasurer, to Mr. Attorney-general; in behalf of the strangers.

AFTER my hearty commendations. Whereas I lately, according to her majesty's good pleasure then signified unto me, directed my letters unto you, for the staying of all suits and informations, until this term, as were then depending in any of her majesty's courts at Westminster, against certain poor candlemakers and others of the Dutch and French congregations, for using of their several trades; whose names were mentioned in a writing, then sent enclosed unto you, under the hand of sir Noel de Caron, kt. who then was a suitor unto her majesty in their behalf. Forasmuch as the said Noel hath again very lately renewed his former suit to her highness for the said strangers, humbly desiring that all suits and informations commenced against them by certain informers upon penal statutes, for exercising their several trades within the said city of London, might be stayed; and no further proceeding to be had therein, until the true state of their grievances might be heard and understood by such of her highness' privy-council as she shall be pleased to appoint to examine the same; to the intent that upon

ANNO 1599. their report, to be thereof made unto her majesty, such order may be taken in that behalf, as in her princely wisdom shall be thought just and reasonable.

Whereupon her highness hath again given direction unto me to take order for the present stay of all suits now depending against the said strangers accordingly. These are therefore to pray you to take such a course, as all suits and informations, now depending in any of her majesty's courts at Westminster against the said strangers, or any of them, for using of their several trades within the said city, be forthwith stayed, and not to suffer any further proceedings to be had therein, until her majesty's pleasure may be further known. And so I commit you to the Almighty. From Sackville house, the 31st of October, 1601.

Your very loving friend,
T. Buckhurst.

354

Number CCLXIII.

Penned by Anno 1600. *This was the year of the earl of Essex his*
Mr. Francis *plot. Which gave occasion to the setting forth a book,*
(afterwards *by public authority, called,*
lord) Bacon.

A Declaration of the practices and treasons attempted and committed by Robert late earl of Essex, and his complices, against her majesty and her kingdoms; and of the proceedings as well at the arraignment and conviction of the said earl and his adherents, as after. Together with their confessions. Printed at London, by Robert Barker, &c. 4to. 1601.

Anno 1600. THE end of this declaration was to stop divers seditious and most wicked libels thrown abroad, as the dregs of these treasons. Which the late earl of Essex himself, in a letter a little before his death, termed a *leprosy*, that had infected far and near, and did yet remain in the hearts and tongues of some disaffected persons.

Number CCLXIV.

ANNO

1600.

After the rebellion under the earl of Essex were certain prayers, fit for the time, set forth by authority, to be used thrice a week on the prayer days in the churches. Five in number. Occasioned by a great deliverance of the queen and kingdom from a dangerous rebellion. Composed upon her entrance upon a new century, viz. 1600.

The first prayer followeth.

ALMIGHTY God, and most merciful Father, who of thy infinite goodness towards all countries and nations, for the avoiding of confusion, hast appointed kings and princes, as thine angels and lieutenants, and the seals of thy similitude, full of wisdom and beauty, to rule and govern in thy name the people on the earth, committed to their charge, commanding all their subjects to honour, and in no sort to resist them, but to obey them in thy fear even for conscience sake; and likewise to offer unto thee for them all supplications, prayers, intercessions, and thanksgivings, as being the lights, the preservation and means, under thy divine majesty, of the peace, the health, prosperity, and glory of all their subjects and kingdoms; we thy humble servants, bowing down the knees of our hearts, and prostrating ourselves before thy glorious throne, do render unto thee all praise, power, honour, and thanksgiving, for thy most gracious favour and merciful deliverance of our most dread sove- 355
reign lady, thy vicegerent in her dominions, queen Elizabeth, as ever heretofore, so at this time, from the traitorous attempts and desperate designments of sundry most unkind and disloyal-like persons, who forgetting their duty both to thee, O Lord, and towards thine anointed, have in the height of their pride, after a popular sort, with divers false pretences, and many slanderous calumniations, sought in open rebellion, not only the destruction and extinguish-
ing of thy servant, our comfort, our health, and our glory, but the utter ruin also and tragical overthrow of this our native country, her majesty's (through thy manifold mer-
cies) so worthy, so happy, and so renowned a kingdom. Earl of Essex.

ANNO
1600.

This year
beginning
a new cen-
tury.

This thy most mighty and fatherly protection, O Lord God of hosts, we entirely beseech thee, with penitent hearts, for our former offences, to continue over us from age to age, by defending still the sacred person of our sovereign lady from all such dangerous designments, her kingdoms and countries from all treacherous practices, and us her subjects from the deceitful baits and crafty allurements of all popular and ambitious dissembling Absaloms. And that so our hearts being still replenished with the joy of thy salvation, we may daily present, in all thankfulness, before thy fatherly goodness, the freewill offerings and sacrifices of our lips; always praising and magnifying thy blessed name, through Jesus Christ our Lord. To whom, with thee and the Holy Ghost, three Persons and one God, be all honour and glory, from this time forth for evermore.

Number CCLXV.

The second prayer on the same deliverance follows.

O ETERNAL and gracious God, father of peace, and protector of government, who with a special eye of providence watchest over the heads of princes, upon whose safety the lives of many thousands do depend, we, thy humble servants, do bow down the knees of our hearts, and pour forth our souls in thankfulness before thee, for thy so gracious and merciful deliverance of our dread sovereign, thy handmaid, from the treacherous intent and desperate conspiracy of disloyal subjects, who have risen up against thine anointed, and, like unnatural children, have rebelled against the mother of their own lives, that took them up from their cradles, and cherished them in her own bosom^a, and laded them with honours and preferments; to the great dishonour of thy name, to the slander of thy gospel, to the danger of confusion to their own native country.

^a As she did
the earl of
Essex.

But thou, O Lord of hosts, our deliverer, didst overthrow them in their own imaginations, and by thy instruments hast declared them enemies to thine own majesty:

thou didst put obedience into the hearts of thy faithful people, and, without shedding of their innocent blood, didst miraculously beat down the forces of all those that rose up against thine ordinance. ANNO
1600.

For which thy unspeakable goodness towards us, vouch-356 safe, we beseech thee, to receive the freewill offerings of our hearts, and calves of our lips, in praises to thy glorious name; who, notwithstanding our manifold sins and transgressions, hast not yet forgot to be gracious, but heapest mercy upon mercy, and causest blessings to follow and overtake blessing as the waves of the sea. To thee, therefore, our saviour and defender, our watch-tower and our rock, we will sing the songs of thankfulness, and call upon thy blessed name for evermore: beseeching thee so to continue the favour of thy countenance toward thine own anointed magistrate and us her faithful people, that our light may never go out, and our song may never cease in this land; but that thy glorious acts may sound in every congregation, ever praise and honour and glory to thee that sittest upon the throne, for ever and ever. *Amen.*

Imprinted at London by Robert Barker, printer to the queen's majesty, ann. Dom. 1600. 4to.

Number CCLXVI.

A private letter of Mr. Francis Bacon (afterwards sir Francis Bacon, lord Verulam) to Robert earl of Essex: upon that earl's motion to come into his party, as the means to rise.

My lord,

NO man can better expound my doings than your lordship. Which maketh me need to say the less. Only I humbly pray you to believe, that I aspire to the conscience and commendation, first of *bonus civis*; which with us is a good and true servant to the queen; and next of *bonus vir*, that is, an honest man. I desire your lordship also to think, that though I confess I love some things much better

ANNO
1600.

than I love your lordship; as the queen's service, her quiet and contentment, her honour, her favour, and the good of my country, and the like; yet I love few persons better than yourself, both for gratitude's sake, and for your own virtues; which cannot hurt, but by accident or abuse. Of which good affection I was ever, and am ready, to yield testimony by any good offers; but with such reserves as yourself cannot but allow.

For as I was over-sorry that your lordship should fly with waxen wings, doubting Icarus' fortune; so for the growing up of your feathers, especially ostriches, or any other, save of a bird of prey, no man shall be more glad. And this is the axle-tree whereupon I have turned, and shall turn with; to signify to you that I think you are of yourself persuaded as much, is the cause of my writing. And so I commend your lordship to God's goodness. From Gray's Inn, this 20th of July, 1600.

Your lordship's most bounden,

Fr. Bacon.

357

Number CCLXVII.

James king of Scotland to lord Hambleton, one of his servants now in England; to assure the English of his steadiness in religion. The writing of which letter was occasioned, as it seems, from two breves sent from the pope this year to the popish priests and people, to admit none to succeed to the crown of England, but such as were Roman Catholics. From the Harleian library.

Mr. Hambleton,

ALTHOUGH I never doubted, and was ever sufficiently informed, of the good-will borne towards me in all lawful sort, (for otherwise I never did nor shall require them,) by all the honest subjects of England, that I sincerely make the profession of the only true religion professed, and by law established in both these countries; (the band of conscience being the only sure band for tying of

men's affections to them, to whom they owe a natural duty :) yet, having the same renewed and confirmed unto me by your late advertisements, I have thought good by this present, all written with mine own hand, to set you down a meeting for them in this point, that is, that ye shall in my name assure all the honest men ye can meet with, that are affected that way, and that in the princely word of a Christian king, that as I have ever, without swerving, professed and maintained the same religion within all the bounds of my kingdom; so may they assure themselves, that how soon it shall please God lawfully to possess me with the crown of that kingdom, wherein they are subjects, I shall not only maintain and continue the profession of the gospel there, but withal not suffer or permit any other religion to be professed and avowed within the bounds of that kingdom.

ANNO
1601.

But because you have been, at your last being with me, particularly acquainted with my intentions in this point, as also that yourself is so well known and approved unto them there, you shall by tongue more particularly inform them of my mind herein; resolving them of such malicious calumnies and unjust imputations, as have from time to time by my undeserved enemies been contrived against me. And thus I bid you heartily farewell.

James R.

Number CCLXVIII.

358

Ann. regin. 43. *The preamble of a grant of the clergy in a convocation, to the queen. Which was four subsidies of 4s. in the pound.*

ILLUSTRISS. et sereniss. in Christo principi et dnæ. Anno 1601. &c. Joannes divina providentia Cant. archiepiscopus..... omnimodam obedientiam, et subjectionem, ac felicitatem et salutem, vestre sereniss. regię sublimitati per præsens publicum instrumentum.....significamus, et notum facimus. Quod prælati et clerus, &c. Then after in English

ANNO followeth the tenour of their grant to the queen: begin-
 1601. ning,

Most excellent and most gracious sovereign, your majesty's most humble subjects, your prelates and clergy of the province of Canterbury, called together by your highness' authority, and now lawfully assembled and met together in a convocation or synod, acknowledging themselves of all others your loyal subjects most bounden, and yet of all others least able to do your majesty that excellent service which they are willing to do; have nevertheless, by your gracious favour, entered into a due consideration by what means, in this general inclination of all sorts of your loving subjects, they might best declare their devotion and duties to your highness. Wherein, though they find no better means in themselves to further and advance your royal estate, than by the diligent discharge of their function, that is, by their earnest prayers unto God for your majesty's peaceable and prosperous reign, with long and happy life, and by their faithful instruction of your people in their subjection and allegiance, yet remembering on the one side the number and importance of those benefits which your majesty's wise and godly government hath yielded to all degrees and sorts, and in a special manner unto them: (for who hath or should have a livelier sense or better remembrance of your majesty's princely courage and constancy, in advancing and protecting the free profession of the gospel within and without your majesty's dominions, against so many and so mighty adversaries thereof, and of your most Christian care to maintain peace within your kingdom and among your people, than your clergy?) And on the other side, that for the procuring and continuing of these inestimable benefits unto us, your majesty's most sacred person hath been often in hazard and danger, your crown and dignity maliciously envied and undermined, your kingdoms and dominions troubled and invaded, your royal treasure much wasted, the revenues of your crown greatly diminished, your subjects (saving in cases of extreme necessity) graciously spared and forborne; and that at this pre-

sent an army of Spaniards, that implacable enemy of your realm, have with violence entered into some parts of your majesty's kingdom of Ireland, whence, without great and excessive charge, they will not be expelled. ANNO
1601.

Wherefore your said prelates and clergy have thought it their duty, besides their continual intercession to God for your highness' prosperity and safety, to offer unto your majesty some such aid and contribution of money toward the support of your charges, as they are persuaded the present expelling of this proud attempt of the Spaniard, and other your majesty's most weighty and princely affairs, do necessarily and speedily require. May it therefore please your most excellent majesty, &c.

Number CCLXIX.

The conclusion of this year concluded the last year of queen Elizabeth's life. I add some short account of her life and reign from a few words of George Abbot, D. D. (afterwards archbishop of Canterbury) in his book against Hill, a Jesuit.

WHAT may be imagined of the life and reign of our late blessed sovereign, who after so many dangers came to the crown, and that, under so many difficulties of subjects at home, and foreign princes abroad, yea, and of the Devil every where, did promise to maintain the truth of God, and to deface superstition? And with this beginning she with uniformity continued; yielding her land as a sanctuary to all the world, groaning for liberty of their religion; flourishing in wealth, honour, estimation every way; admired by all the monarchs, whither the fame of her did come, and leaving there for such a story, as no prince hath left the like. This queen, after the defeating of the *invincible navy* in the year 1588, after many renowned prosperities, notwithstanding the frequent conspiracies of ungodly persons against her, by the favour of the Highest, under the shadow of whose wings she was ever safely guarded, died

ANNO
1602.

in peace in a full and glorious age: so beloved, honoured, and esteemed of her subjects, as never any prince more.

And God, to testify his own work, left at her death no noted calamity or misery in the kingdom, no wars. And even Ireland then calmed. No famine, nor apparent pestilence. No inundation of water: but plenty and abundance, with unexpected tranquillity. Yea, to the end that he might crown her with blessings, he put unity and agreement into the nobles, clergy, and commons of the land. That readily they submitted themselves to her lawful and royal successor. Under whom we doubt not but to enjoy religion and all earthly happiness.

360

Number CCLXX.

The mighty esteem and value had of this queen and prosperous government, will appear further, from part of the sermon preached at St. Paul's Cross by Jos. Hall, D. D. dean of Worcester, (afterwards bishop of Norwich,) March 24, 1613, being the anniversary solemnity of king James's access to the crown.

O BLESSED queen, the mother of this nation, the nurse of this church, the glory of womanhood, the envy and example of foreign nations, the wonder of times; how sweet and sacred shall thy memory be to all posterities! And though the foul mouths of our adversaries stick not to call her *miseram feminam*, [miserable woman,] as pope Clement did, not to say of her..... and those that durst bring her on the stage living, being now dead, (as I have heard by those that have seen it,) into their procession like a tormented ghost, with fiends and firebrands, to the terror of their ignorant beholders, yet, as we say, she never prospered so well, as when she was most cursed by their Pius V. How excellent were her masculine graces of learning, valour, wisdom; by which she might justly challenge to be the queen of men! So learned was she, that she could give present answer to ambassadors in their own tongues..... so

ANNO
1602.

valiant, that like Zisca's drum, made the proudest Romanist to quake: so wise, that whatever fell out happily against the common adversary in France, Netherland, Ireland, it was by themselves ascribed to her policy.

What should I speak of her long and successful government, of her miraculous preservations, of her famous victories, wherein the waters, winds, fire, and earth fought for us, as if they had been in pay under her: of her excellent laws, and of her careful execution. Many daughters have done worthily, but thou surmountedst them all. Such was the sweetness of her government, and such the fear of misery in her loss, that many worthy Christians desired their eyes might be closed before hers; and how many thousands therefore willed their own deaths, because it prevented hers. Every one pointed to her white hairs, and said with that peaceable Leontius, "When this snow melteth, there
"will be a flood."

Soz. lib. iii.
cap. 29.

Never day, except always the fifth of November, was like to be so bloody as this; not for any doubt of title, (which never any loyal heart could question, nor any disloyal ever did, besides Dolman,) but for that our executors comforted themselves against us, and said, The devil, one morning, will come shortly for our mother, then will we slay our brethren. What should I say more? Lots were cast upon our land, and that honest politician, (which wanted nothing but a gibbet to have made him a saint,) father Parsons, took pains to set down an order how all English affairs should be marshalled, when they should come to be theirs.

Dangers
surely expected at
her decease.

Consider now the great things that the Lord hath done for us. Behold! this day, which should have been most dismal to the whole Christian world, he turned to the most happy day that ever shone forth to this island: that now we may justly insult with those Christians of Antioch, *Πῶς οὐκ ἐὰν μαντεύη;* Where are your prophecies, O! ye fond pa-
pists? Our snow lies here melted: where are those floods
of blood that you threatened? Yea, as that blessed soul of hers gained by this change of an immortal crown for a cor-

Theol. 3.

ANNO
1602.

ruptible, so, blessed be the name of our God, this land of ours hath not lost by that loss.

The virtue and abilities of king James, this queen's successor; displayed in the proceeding of this preacher's sermon.

Surely a new and golden world began this day to us, and promiseth continuance, if our sins interrupt it not, to our posterity. If we see not the worth of our king, how shall we be thankful to God that gave him?

His learning.

Let me begin with his *learning* and *knowledge*, wherein, I may safely say, he exceedeth all his 105 predecessors, &c. Never had England more learned bishops and doctors: which of them ever returned from his majesty's discourse without admiration? What king christened hath written so learned volumes? To omit the rest, his last in this kingdom, wherein he hath so held up cardinal Bellarmine, and his master pope Pius, is such, that Plessis and Moulin (the two great lights of France) profess to receive their light in this discourse from his beams. And the learned Jesuit Salkeld could not but be converted with the necessity of those demonstrations. And I may boldly say, popery (since it was) never received so deep a wound from any work as from that of his. What king ever moderated so solemn acts of an university in all professions, and had so many hands clapped in the applause of his acute and learned determinations? Briefly, such is his entire acquaintance with all sciences, and with the queen of all, Divinity, that he might well dispute with the infallible pope Paul V. for the triple crown. And I would all Christian quarrels lay upon this duel.

His justice.

His justice in governing matcheth his knowledge, how to govern, &c. He hath ever endeavoured to frame the proceedings of his government to the laws, not the laws to them. Witness that memorable example, whereof your

ANNO
1602.

eyes were witnesses; I mean the impartial execution of the ancientest barons of those parts for the murdering of a mean subject. Wherein not the favour of the block might be yielded; that the dishonour of the death might be no less than the pain of the death.

His mercy.

Yet who will not grant his mercy to be eminent among his virtues, when Parsons [the noted Jesuit] himself yieldeth it? And if a virtue so continuing could be capable of excess, this might seem so in him. I pray God the measure of this virtue may never hurt himself. I am sure the want of it shall never give cause of complaint to his adversaries.

His religion.

Among all his heroical graces which commend him as a man, as a Christian, as a king, piety and firmness in religion calls me to it. With what zeal did his majesty fly upon the blasphemous novelties of Vorstius! How many solicitations, threats, promises, proffers, hath he trampled under his feet in former times, for but a promise of an indifferent connivance of the Romish religion! Was it not an answer worthy of a king, worthy of mervail, and brave, that he made unto their agent for this purpose in the times of the greatest peril of resistance, That all the crowns and kingdoms of this world should not induce him to change one jot of his profession? Hath he not so engaged himself in this holy quarrel, that the world confesseth Rome hath never such an adversary, and all Christian princes rejoice to follow him, as their worthy leader, in all the battles of God? And all Christian churches, in their prayers and acclamations, style him, in a double right, *defender of the faith*, more by desert than inheritance. [Thus far the dean in his sermon upon the character of the present excellent princess and her immediate successor.]

Watson, B.
Barlow's
Answer to
Parsons,
p. 115.
e. cora.
Northampt.
Lib.

Amongst the virtuous qualifications of queen Elizabeth, one was, that she was addicted to learning, and oftentimes retired to her studies. And many learned tracts by learned men were presented to her reading in manuscript. It may

ANNO
1602.

not be amiss here to mention two: the one by Dr. Richard Masters, the queen's physician, concerning diseases, and the causes of them, written upon occasion of her inquiry upon that subject. The other by Charnoek, a great philosopher, concerning the philosopher's stone, and the right course and method of attaining it. The sum of both books may appear by the dedications that follow.

Number CCLXXI.

Richard Master, M.D. physician in ordinary to the queen: concerning the causes of diseases: upon her question to him on that subject.

Serenissimæ principi, ac dominæ suæ, Elizabethæ, Dei gratia Angliæ, Franciæ, et Hiberniæ reginæ, &c.

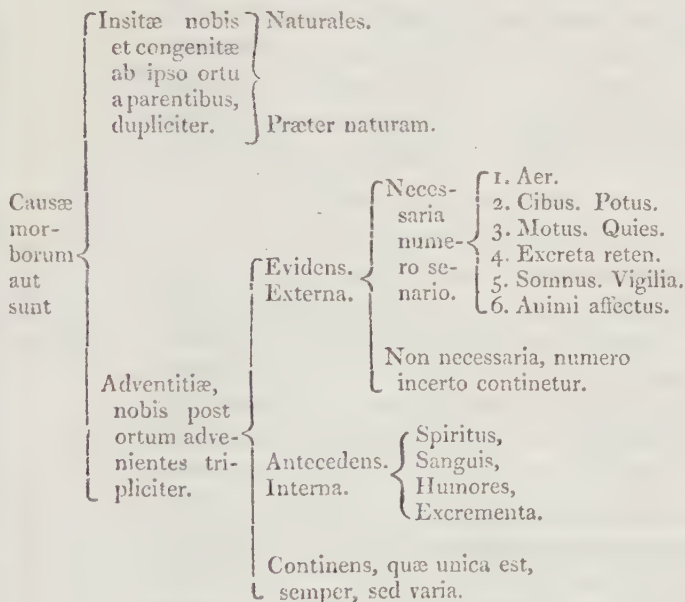
ANTE paucos menses accitus ad summam tuam majestatem, ut certior fierem de quibusdam affectibus, qui tunc temporis sacrum tuum corpus male cruciabant, inter cætera
363 in cum forte sermonem incidisti, qui de causis illorum morborum egit, quibuscum visa est tua majestas molestari. Hinc data et accepta occasione, ad meam fidem et officium pertinere putavi, brevem aliquam epitomen per methodum explicatam de morborum causis contexere, eamque tuæ majestati exhibere. Qua instructa et munita, possit facile et eas præcavere, si quodocunque occurrant, et admonere nos qui tibi sumus a medicinis, ut eisdem pro viribus resistamus. Hoc munus ut inchoarem, efficit, tum pietas, observantia et officium erga tuam majestatem meum, tum dominus Cicilius ob animi et ingenii ornamenta secretarius tuus dignissimus, qui id ut perficerem adhortatus est. Nam ut homo est ad rempublicam promovendam natus, ita omnem suam operam, studium, industriam in eandem collocat, ut salvam præcipue velit tuam majestatem. Dedi itaque operam, ut minime cum fastidio promissi muneris pensum absolverem. Idcirco brevi tanquam in tabella, quemadmodum fere solent, qui urbium et provinciarum situs depin-

gunt, morborum causas collegi, easque dextræ tuæ, septis ANNO
tencendis insigni, libellisque supplicibus recipiendis promptæ, 1602.
supplex et exosculans offero.

Tuæ majestati addict.

Richardus Masterus.

De morborum causis.



ANNO
1602.

Number CCLXXII.

364 *Charnock, a great philosopher, presented her majesty with a book, richly gilt, of the philosopher's stone, and of the true way and art to obtain it. All written (as it seems) with his own hand. The title it bore was:*

A book dedicated unto the queen's majesty by master Thomas Charnocke, student in the most worthy sciences of astronomy, physie, and philosophy: concerning the work of natural philosophy.

Nihil est opertum, quod non reveletur, et occultum, quod non sciatur. Matth. x.

Anno a Virgineo partu 1565.

Then follows the epistle.

To the most high and vertuous princesse ELIZABETH, by the grace off God, queene of England, Fraunce, and Irelande, defender off the faith, her highness most humble and obedient subject Thomas Charnocke, student in the most worthy sciencis off astronomie, phisicke, and natural philosophie, wysheth loung to raigne over us, in health, princely wealth, roiall honour and felicitie.

I HAVE been often mynded, most noble princesse, ever since the first yere of your graces prosperous raigne over this your imperiall realme of England, to fynd summe meanes whereby I might present unto your highnes in writings, the effect of this epistell, wherein should be containyd the hole summ of mynnynde, whereby your majestie myght understande what I your graces humble subject am able to do in length of tyme in that most worthie science of naturall philosophie, as to the true and perfect makeing of the philosophers stone; a most precyous pearle for princes, a jouell above all jouells of this worlde, which manye thousands do dayly seek, and scarce v. in xv. kyngdoumes doth fynde:

The cause is, most myghtie princesse, that for the excellencie of this science, and for the hiding of the same, the philosophers have written off too sciencis, a false and a true,

ANNO
1601.

the false is written as a meane whereby the true should not be founde, and is named *alchimie*, written in liquid and doubtful words easie to be understood, with *recipe et accipe*, which common practitioners do follow, thinkinge thereby to make both sylver and golde, and to multiplie the same in a short tyme to a numcrable summe, workinge with sulphure, arsenike, quickesylver, sal armoniacke, and other salts and bodies cabined: menginge them togyther, dissolvinge them, vapouringe them, congluing them, and 365 other operations manyefolde:

But when the tyme shall come that their worke shall be brought to his examination what for the more and what for the lesse, there wyll be well fixed nether good golde, good silver, ne it good brasse:

And thus a number, not only in this your highness realme, but also therowout all Europa, do desire to put in practice this false science off alchimie for laker sake, whereby they be deceived, and yerely great ryches consumed:

But the true science is the makinge of the philosophers stone, which they have hyd under darke and mistie tearmes, as by parables, similitudes, and allegores, because it should not be understood but off verye philosophers, and that covetous ne wycked men should not attayne unto this science, for therewith they would be more redye to maynteine wycked woorkes then to doc good dedes:

And although that which the philosophers have written is so mysticallie written, that no mans witt is sufficient to conceive their meaning off this most secret science, and have written hereoff hole librerars off bookes, yet the secret have they left out, and conclude with this like sentence sayinge:

Now we have revelyd unto you all things, saving the secret off the science, which we ought to revele unto no man, but have ylded it upp into the hands off God, unto whom it pleaseth him to gyve it, and from whom it shall please him to take it awaye:

And another philosopher sayeth, We have not sayde all things which are necessarie unto this worke, for ther are

ANNO
1602.

some things which ought not to be written ne tolde to no man, and it is impossible this secret to knowe except it be gyven him from God, or of a master which shall teache him, which hie and great secret your majestie shall understande that it was reveled unto mee in the iiiith and viith yere off the raigne off Phillip and Marye, under a most sacred and dreadful othe by a spiritual man some tyme religious, who seinge he could not lyve lounge for age, as indeed he died shortly after, and knowinge that I had not only studied this science above xx yeres, but also that I had gyven my selfe to a continuall travell thorow out all Englyshe grownde for the obtayninge of the same, he made me his heier in that great secret.

It for all this your highness must conceive, that I, nor it no man ells which hath this rare and syldome secret, is ever the neere off this most riche and precyous stone, without great grace and patience in lounge continuance of tyme, which the work wyll aske from his begynning, or that it be endyed, and brought to the thyrde degree of his perfection:

And this is the principal cause, most myghtie princess, the secrets once knownen, why they cannot attayne unto the true and perfect making of the same, because they are ever desierous and hastie to se a shorte ende, and wyll not suffer nature at her own leasure to make her operation, for they do chaunge their myndes from their woorke some in a yere, some in a quarter, ye and some in a mounth, because they cannot se that at the fyrst, which wyll appear at the
366 last, such mutable mynded men, sayeth the philosophers, shall never perfectly fynishe our science, for where such fooles do leve, there wise men begyn.

Thus, most excellent princess, I have brefflye revealed unto your roiall maiestie the great errour which so great a number of praetytioners do follow, which take the false science of alchymie to be the true woorke to the obtaininge of the philosophers stone:

Secondarely, I have opened unto your majestie, that the science off natural philosophie is a science most true, by the

which maye be wrought in length off tyme that precious and ryche jouell named the philosophers stone, which being fynished in his thirde degree, it is more worthe and precious for a princes dignitie, then yf he had iii or six ships come from Hispaniola, the coste of Guinea, or the islands off Molucca, laden with golde, precious stones, pearle, iuorve, pepper, and all kinde off spices, not for the hope of the attayneing to so many hunderith pounde wayghts of goolde, but that it is the greatest cordiall in the worlde:

ANNO
1602.

Thirdeley, Your highness may now perseve why it is so syldome found, that scarce v. in xv. kyngdomes can attayne unto the true perfection of the same, as for lacke of the secrets which never was written, nor it never shall be.

Forthly, That when it shall please God for anye one man to attayne unto that hie secret and gyft of God, ether taught him by some master or gyven him of God by grace and good liveinge, it cannot such a one as sone as he wolde desire, accomplyshe the ende of this miraculous lounge and tedious worke, without he be a man given to great solyteryness, and can be patient, and not to hastie to fynyshe his worke, but suffer nature a lyttel and lyttel, at her owne leasure, to make generation passinge the substance off embrion.

And to suche a one God hath not onely ylded to him the secrets, but also the accomplysheinge of the most precious stone off the worlde at the laste to his great joye and comfort, and allso to his perpetuall fame and memorie:

Now, most excellent princess, this my unletteryd epistell being fynysshed, I was in a great muse by what meanes it myght be presentyd unto your highness, and hath troubled my hedd as mouche as the studie in makeing of the sole booke; yet hopeing to the best, I determined with myselfe, to request some worshippful or honourable retayeninge to your maiesties most roiall courte, that yf it were possible to have so muche frendeshipp that this my epistell with the confabulation followinge myght be presentyd unto your roial maiestie, trusteing that it shall come fortunately unto your graces hands, which when it is perused either by

ANNO
1602.

your highness, or anye off your honourable counsell, then I commyt this my enterpryse unto your maiesties high discretion:

And thus not knowinge how your maiestie wyll delight the redeinge of this science, I wyll seasse my pen to eschue prolixities:

And now I do mych blame myselfe for that I have not in this my epistell used my pen in eache poynte and sentence, with suche high names off dignitie as it becometh to so noble and roiall a princess as ye are, consideringe that the Tourke and infidell doth magniffie his prince with all
367 regall honour and earthly dignitie above the sterne skye or viii sphere:

This consyderaed I wyll not be abashed to write to save your maiestie in such royall reputation, as to be the most hight myghtie, and Christian princess off the world, which I beseeche God to mayntayne in your most royall estate, and lounge to raigne over us in much honour, joye, and felicitie.

Number CCLXXIII.

To which may be added a third book in manuscript of the subject of divinity, (as the two former were of physic and philosophy,) viz. concerning the doctrine of justification, by Richard Beard, some learned divine; writ, perhaps, for the queen's satisfaction in that great disputed point in those times. The title whereof and the writer's dedication follow.

De vera Justificatione Christiani hominis coram Deo, præcipuæ doctorum et patrum sententiæ;

Et etiam

Harmoniæ evangelicæ.....

Illustrissimæ reginæ, Elizabethæ, Dei gratia, Angliæ, Franciæ, et Hiberniæ reginæ, fidei defensori, &c.

Gratiam et pacem per Jesum Christum.

QUUM ego, in messe et vinea Domini, in prædicatione verbi ejus, operarius et minister constitutus essem: et as-

sidua meditatione mecum in animo volverem, quanta ministris ecclesiæ cura (juxta illud, *Pasce, pasce, pasce oves meas: et, Pascite, quantum in vobis est, gregem Christi*) commissa sit; officii mei esse existinavi, ut non solum prædicando, verum etiam scribendo, pro viribus meis, populum Dei doctrina salutifera ædificarem. Qua quidem in re, inter meas lucubrationes, volumina doctorum et patrum volendo, præcipuas eorum sententias, quæ de rebus illis, circa quas, jam diu inter sancti evangelii professores et degenerem Romæ (ut vocant) ecclesiam, permagna disceptatio et controversia pugnaz extiterit pro nobis, contra papistas, maxime faciunt, industria magna collegi, et in medium proferre desideravi.

Non ut super homines, quamvis pios et doctos, fundandam Christianam fidem censeam. Sola enim sancta scriptura statera est, per quam omnis doctrina, ad salutem necessaria, est probanda: secundum illud apostoli Pauli; “*Si Gal. i. quis vobis evangelizaverit præter id quod accepistis, anathema sit.*”

“*Et (ut ait Augustinus) afferamus divinam stateram de Lib. de Baptismo contra Donatistas, lib. ii. scripturis sanctis, tanquam de thesauris dominicis, et in illa quid gravius sit appendamus.*”

“*Neque enim (ut ille alibi habet) quorumlibet disputationes quamvis catholicorum et laudatorum hominum vel-* 368

“*ut scripturas canonicas habere debemus, ut nobis non li-* Ad Fortunat.

“*ceat salva honorificentia quæ illis debetur hominibus ali-* Epist. iii.

“*quid in eorum scriptis improbare atque respuere, si forte*

“*invenerimus quod aliter senserit quam veritas habet.*”

“*Et ergo (ut in alio loco dicit) cedamus et consentiamus autoritati scripturæ sanctæ, quæ nescit falli nec fallere.*” De peccatorum meritis, lib. i. cap. 22.

“*Nam (ut ait Cyrillus) necessarium nobis est divinas se-* Ad reginas de recta fide.

“*qui literas, et in nullo ab earum præscripto discedere.*”

Sed eas sententias in lucem proferendas esse concupivi, ut inde Christi fideles clare videant, antiquos et sanctos ecclesiæ patres non aliter credidisse et docuisse, quam nos modo credimus, et docemus populum: et eosdem veritatis

ANNO
1602.

nobiscum fuisse testes; et etiam nos injuste quidem ab illis accusatos esse, qui affirmant nos longe aliter plebem Christum nunc instituere, quam olim patres illos catholicos: et rursum ut nostri inimici, et qui a divina veritate deviarunt, per eos, quorum auctoritatem, pro se, tam diu fateri falso jactitarunt (et ergo sine magno pudore eorum judicia improbare nullo modo possunt) aut satisfacti nobiscum in Dei veritate consentiant, aut saltem ad decipiendum Christi plebem verbum ullum proloqui in posterum erubescant.

Et harum, quantum me tempus nunc sinneret, de vera justificatione Christiani hominis, hoc est, de fidei Christianae fundamento, hic descripsi In quibus aperte videri poterit, si nos non aliam doctrinam, quam omnes isti catholici patres, doceamus; adversarios nostros in vitio quidem esse, quod illos sanctos et fidei Christi columnas, et nos hæreticos pro illorum doctrina vocant. Nam aut illos nobiscum condemnare, aut nos cum illis consentientes, absque ulla controversia, probare debent.

Sed hic eorum malitia et perfidia detegitur, et ab omnibus contemplanda proponitur.

Porro quia sancti evangelistæ de evangelio Jesu Christi omnes scribunt, et eorum quidam, plura de rebus quibusdam, et minus de rebus aliis scripserunt, quidam exacta diligentia notarunt quæ alii prætermittant, et eorum sapientia duo vel tres vel omnes de re una et eadem conscribendo consentiunt, et etiam eorum unusquisque, cæteris omnibus eo multo melius intelligendis (qui nisi inter se collati sint perfecte quidem nequeunt intelligi) lumen magnum præbet:

Et quoniam tam difficile est tot sanctorum evangelistarum verba, in tam diversis locis querenda, semper inter sese conferre, quod plurimi qui legunt ea nunquam fere præ tædio simul conferant:

Igitur putavi me, laterem (ut dicitur) non lauturum, nec operam meam perditurum, si ita sanctorum evangelistarum opera conscriberem, ut lector, eorum alicujus evangelium intuens, eodem aspectu, cum omnibus cæteris de eadem re

loquentibus, sine ulla difficultate et indagazione applicaret et conferret: et quid, et quo ordine, de eadem re loquerentur, intelligeret. ANNO
1602.

Hoc feci, et eidem libro nomen indidi harmoniam evangelicam: eo quod in musices harmonia, aliquando unus solus, et aliquando duo, vel tres, vel plures, simul dulces canentes, suavi melodia concordant.

Multi antehac de hac re scripserunt, ut Gerson, Dionysius, Osiander, Calvinus, et alii: sed nullus eorum hoc certo modo et ordine, quo ego nunc, perscripsit.

Et, ni fallor, hac ratio conferendi evangelistas, majorem fructum et utilitatem, quam ulla quæ hactenus impressa est, lectori studioso ministrabit.

Nam in Gersonis *Monotessaro*, et *Pandectis legis evangelicæ*, et etiam Osiandri *Harmonia*, nemo facile, imo ne vix quidem ullius evangelistæ verba sigillatim et seorsum legere potest. Et in Calvini *Harmonia*, Joannis Evangelium non inseritur: et etiā ubi ceteros conferre simul studet, eorum sententias concordantes sæpe non conjungit.

Sed hic, historiam, historico ordine, quo singula et facta et dicta sunt, et etiam quatuor evangelia, eo semper ordine conservato, quo eorum unusquisque separate scripsit, invenies.

Ubi aliquis sanctorum evangelistarum rem aliquam ab aliis tractatam prætermittit; columnam suam, quousque ea pars ab illo omisa sese proferat, vacuum habet.

Et cum de aliqua re concordent, eorum singula verba congruentia, sunt conjuncta.

Ut lector, aliquam partem alienius evangelistæ aspiciens, facillime eodem ipso aspectu, utrum ullus præter eum de eadem re conscripserit intueri, et cum duo vel plures eorum consentiunt, sine ulla difficultate, inter se conferre, possit.

Et ad eam collationem et applicationem, iste liber lectorem plurimum incitabit.

Nam quis evangelistam aliquem hic legens, et alium concordantem ob oculos aspiciens, quid ille quoque dicit, et plus vel minus habet, et in quibus pariter consentiunt, et

ANNO
1602.

quid eorum unus uno modo, et alius alio, recte scribit, perspicendi studio non ardebit?

Et hujus etiam operis, illustrissima regina, librum primum, qui historiam evangelii, usque ad finem tentationis in deserto, continet, donec mihi tempus residuum describenda a Deo Opt. Max. concedi poterit, ad tuam celsitudinem deferro.

Mar. xii.
Luc. xxi.

Confidens pro tuæ majestatis benignitate, (in qua quidem omnes regię virtutes, ex dono Regis regum, splendide uberrimeque micant,) si Christus viduę illius pauperculę, quę in gazophylacium minuta duo misit, magis quam omnium divitum munera, eo quod ex sua penuria miserat, domum commendavit; quod tua celsitudo, hanc partem exiguum, tanquam operis majoris specimen, et quasi gustum, in qua totius forma et ordo plene demonstratur, donec inde reliqua transcribere potero, in bonam partem et mente benigna accipiet.

Quod me vehementissime quidem incitabit, in rebus ejusmodi fructuosus, dies noctesque, laborare.

Et ego (necessitate officii mei ductus) pro tuæ majestatis incolumitate et felicitate perpetua, Dominum, bonorum omnium largitorem, assiduis precationibus, orare, quoad vixero, nunquam desinam.

Tuæ majestati devinctissimus,

Richardus Beard.

370

Number CCLXXIV.

A proclamation by the nobles of England, upon the death of queen Elizabeth, of the succession of king James. March 24, 1602.

FORASMUCH as it hath pleased Almighty God to call to his mercy out of this transitory life our sovereign lady, the high and mighty prince Elizabeth, late queen of England, France, and Ireland; by whose death and dissolution the imperial crown of these realms aforeaid are now absolutely, wholly, and solely come to the high and

ANNO
1602.

mighty prince James the Sixth, king of Scotland; who is lineally and lawfully descended from the body of Margaret, daughter to the high and renowned prince Henry VII. king of England, France, and Ireland, his great-grandfather, the said lady Margaret being lawfully begotten of the body of Elizabeth, daughter to king Edward IV. By which happy conjunction both the houses of York and Lancaster were united to the joy unspeakable of this kingdom, formerly rent and torn by the long dissension of bloody and civil wars; the said lady Margaret being also the eldest sister of Henry VIII. of famous memory, king of England, as aforesaid:

We therefore, the lords spiritual and temporal of this kingdom, being here assembled, united, and assisted with those of her late majesty's privy-council, and with great numbers of other principal gentlemen of quality in the kingdom, with the lord mayor, aldermen, and citizens of London, and a multitude of other good subjects and commons of this realm; thirsting now after nothing so much as to make it known to all persons, who it is that by law, by lineal succession and undoubted right, is now become the only sovereign lord and king of these imperial crowns, (to the intent that by virtue of his power, wisdom, and godly courage, all things may be provided for and executed which may prevent or resist either foreign attempts, or popular disorder, tending to the breach of the present peace, or to the prejudice of his majesty's full quiet,) do now hereby, with one voice and consent of tongue and heart, publish and proclaim, that the high and mighty prince James the Sixth of Scotland is now, by the death of our late sovereign queen of England, of famous memory, become also our only lawful, lineal, and rightful liege lord James the First, king of England, France, and Ireland, defender of the faith. To whom, as to our only just prince, adorned (besides his undoubted right) with all the rarest gifts of mind and body, to the infinite comfort of all his people and subjects that shall live under him, we do acknowledge all faith and constant obedience, with all hearty

ANNO
1602.

and humble affection, both during our natural lives, for ourselves, and in the behalf of our posterity. Hereby protesting and denouncing to all persons whatsoever, that in this just and lawful act of ours, we are resolved, by the favour of God's holy assistance, and in the zeal of our own conscience, (warranted by certain knowledge of his manifest and undoubted right, as hath been said before,) to maintain and uphold his majesty's person and estate, as our only undoubted sovereign lord and king, with the sacrifice of our lives, lands, goods, friends, and adherents, against all power, force, or practice, that shall go about, by word or deed, to interrupt, contradict, or impugn his just claims, his entry into this kingdom, or any part thereof at his good pleasure, or disobey such royal directions as shall come from him. To all which we are resolved to yield ourselves, until the last drop of our blood be spent for his service. Hereby willing and commanding, in the name of our sovereign lord James the First, king of the aforesaid kingdoms, all the late lieutenants, deputy-lieutenants, sheriffs, justices, and all mayors, bailiffs, constables, headboroughs, and all other officers and ministers whatsoever, that they be aiding and assisting from time to time, in all things that are or shall be necessary for the preventing rising, and suppressing any disorderly assemblies, or other unlawful act or attempt, either in word or deed, against the public peace of the realm, or any way prejudicial to the right, honour, state, or person of our only undoubted and dear lord and sovereign that now is, James the First, king of all the said kingdoms; as they will avoid the peril of his majesty's heavy indignation, and their own utter ruin and confusion. Beseeching God to bless his majesty and his royal posterity with long and happy years over us. *God save King James.*

Rob. Lee, mayor,	Clanrickard,	Tho. Buckhurst,
Jo. Cantuar.	Ri. London,	E. Oxford,
Tho. Egerton,	Rob. Heref.	Nottingham,
Pembroke,	Jo. Norwich,	Northumberland.
H. Lincoln,	Tho. La Warre,	Gilb. Shrewsb.

W. Derby,	Lomley,	Walden,	ANNO 1602.
E. Worcest.	Ed. Cromwel,	W. Knollys,	
E. Cumberland,	Rob. Rich,	Ed. Wotton,	
R. Sussex,	Geo. Hunsdon,	Jo. Stanhop,	
Morley,	G. Chandoyes,	Rob. Cecill,	
H. Cobham,	W. Compton,	Joh. Fortescue,	
Gray Wilts,	Norreys,	Jo. Popham.	
Scroope,	L. Howard of		

Number CCLXXV.

372

The valuable apprehension had of king James of Scotland, upon his first coming into this kingdom; in an address to him by Will. Covell, D. D. in his answer to a book that now came forth, called, A pleasure for the innocent; written in behalf of the puritans.

SURELY, if ever nation of the world had cause to hope for happiness to this church and commonwealth, or to give thanks unto the Lord, and to that end to fall low upon our knees before his footstool, it is we, to have a king; but, which is greater happiness, of the same blood, nay, more than that, of the same religion; but most of all, without bloodshed; and especially *then*, when all the politics of the world had set our period, and rung our passing-bell. Even then, by your highness's means, the Lord himself (for we must acknowledge that it was his work) *delivered our soul from death, our eyes from tears, and our feet from falling.* Our soul from bodily and spiritual death; our eyes from tears, arising from our danger; nay, from our holy tears for our late sovereign; and our feet from falling into troubles, which then were present: into sin, which then was likely; into blindness, which then we feared; into shame, which we all deserved; into misery, which many hoped: but we say again, *The Lord hath done great things for us already; and greater, and far greater shall do, if we be not unthankful: and therefore, whosoever thou art, either Jesuit or priest, anabaptist, protestant, or atheist, which sayest in thy heart, Let us make havock of them altogether, thou*

ANNO
1602.

shall suddenly consume and perish, and come to a fearful end; and the church shall continually entreat, at the hands of the Lord of heaven, and humbly before the throne of your gracious majesty, for protection against her and all your adversaries.

And the learned bishops and divines employed in the last translation of the Holy Bible thus addressed themselves to the king in the dedication thereof. Which will shew the sense the clergy had of the happiness accruing to the land by that king's entrance upon the government, and the seasonable prevention of many and great miseries foreseen to ensue, upon the expiration of the former princess's decease, in these words:

“Great and manifold were the blessings, most dread
“sovereign, which Almighty God, the father of all mercies,
“bestowed upon the people of England, when first he sent
“your majesty's royal person to rule and reign over us.
“For whereas it was the expectation of many, who wished
“not well to our Sion, that upon the setting of that bright
“occidental star, queen Elizabeth of most happy memory,
373 “some thick and palpable clouds of darkness would so
“have overshadowed the land, that men should have been
“in doubt which way they were to walk; and that it should
“hardly be known who was to direct the unsettled state;
“the appearance of your majesty, as of the sun in his
“strength, instantly dispelled those supposed and surmised
“mists, and gave unto all that were well affected exceeding
“cause of comfort; especially when we beheld the govern-
“ment established in your highness, and your hopeful seed,
“by an undoubted title, and this also accompanied with
“peace and tranquillity at home and abroad. But amongst
“all our joys, there was none that more filled our hearts,
“than the blessed continuance of the preaching of God's
“sacred word amongst us; which is that inestimable trea-
“sure, which excelleth all the riches of the earth, &c.
“Then not to suffer this to fall to the ground, but rather
“to take it up, and to continue in that state, wherein the

“ famous predecessor of your highness did leave it : nay, to
 “ forward with the confidence and resolution of a man in
 “ maintaining the truth of Christ, and propagating it far
 “ and near, is that which hath so bound and firmly knit the
 “ hearts of all your majesty’s loyal and religious people
 “ unto you, that your very name is precious among them :
 “ their eye doth behold you with comfort, and they bless
 “ you in their hearts, as that sanctified person, who, under
 “ God, is the immediate author of their true happiness.”

ANNO
1603.

This was the satisfaction the people of this land now took in their new king; and in some of the first years of his government.

Number CCLXXVI.

Anonymus (the queen’s physician, as it seems) to Edmund Lambard ; a letter writ the day after the queen’s death, concerning her sickness and departure.

REGINA cum jam per tres fere hebdomadas morbo melancholico, stuporem quendam, non sine læsæ phantasie indiciiis inferente, laborasset, nec per totum id tempus ullis vel rationibus, vel precibus, vel fallaciis, induci potuisset, ut aliquid artis medicæ auxilium experiretur, ac difficulter persuaderi sibi passa sit, ut alimentum naturæ sustinendæ debitum sumeret: somnum autem quam minimum; eumque non in lecto, sed inter pulvinaria, ubi totus dies, et in-somnis, et immota sedere consueverat, caperet. Intelligendi autem vim ad extremum usque spiritum retineret. Linguae vero facultate tribus ante obitum diebus fuisset privata.

Postquam est omnibus et felicissimæ principis et Christianissimæ scæminæ officiis functa, die hesterno, scil. 24 Martii, hora tertia matutina, naturæ cessit.

Convenerunt statim, qui illi erant a conciliis omnes, ad-junctis sibi a nobilitate et episcopis quam plurimis, qui eodem ipso die sub horam decimam antemeridianam, in-374 gressi hanc civitatem, in multis et famosissimis ejusdem locis publico fecialis præconio, prælegente domino secretario,

ANNO 1602. Jacobum sextum Scotiae, nunc ejus nominis primum Angliae regem, et proclamante universo populo, denuntiaverunt.

Et sic adhuc res nostrae habent, ut quietae magis quam compositae esse videantur, donec adventus regis, et solidius eis fundamentum subiciat, et pulchrius aedificium superextruat.

Sub ejus adventum cum certo certius sit, conventum ordinum ad magna comitia fore, ut, quaeso, effice, ut..... mihi sit locus in eis comitiis assignatus.

Number CCLXXVII.

The university of Cambridge to the vice-chancellor and others of the university of Oxford, concerning that university's answer to the petition of the thousand ministers. October, 1603.

Anno 1603. CUM nuperrime et quidem sero admodum ad aures nostras pervenisset fama de libello regiae majestati pro reformanda scilicet ecclesia, a ministris mille, ut perhibetur, exhibito, etsi nihil in eo novi reperiretur, cui non plus millies antehac responsum sit, tamen quoniam numerum jactant, ut intelligerunt millenarii isti, si Saulo mille adstent, Davidi in hac causa decies mille nunquam defuturos, nihil prius habuimus, aut antiquius quam ut operi omni responsione indignissimo aliquod jam responsum pararemus. Quod dum meditatur, defertur ad nos academiae Oxoniensis apologia, certe disertissima quae rationum momentis brevissime refutaret quicquid ab istis tanto labore confectum esset, aut confictum. Qua coarspecta nihil nobis reliqui videbatur, quos ita anteverteret fratrum nostrorum in causa optima zelus et industria prompta satis et parata ad hominum levissimorum ictus omnes, vel extempore refellendos. Quod cum illi pondere certassent argumentorum, non numero, quo illi maxime gloriantur, et praevidimus, et providimus. Cum enim defuncta Elizabetha, regina optima, et in causa optima (quod in muliere prope singulare est et inauditum) semper constantissima, semper eadem, non tam principis reli-

giosissimæ interitum, et religionis, si non intereuntis, at summe certe periclitantis casum deplorare, quam in adventum regis novi novas res meditari isti cepissent, et indies moliri, per opportunum succurrendum, censuit academia; et convocato senatu, frequenti admodum et celebri decernendum: “ Ut quicumque ecclesiæ Anglicanæ doctrinam, vel disciplinam, vel ejus partem aliquam, legibus publicis stabilitam, scriptis vel dictis, vel quocunque modo, in academia Cantabrigiensi publice oppugnaverit, ab omni gradu suscipiendo excludatur, et a suscepto suspendatur ipso facto.”

Quod quidem decretum, consensu prope unanimi comprobatum, et tabulis publicis Junii 9, 1603, consignatum. Nunc demum testatum cupimus universis, ut intelligant 375 omnes de disciplina nostra, non imposita sed suscepta libere, et retenta, quid existiment in angulis opiniastri nonnulli, sed in aperto senatu Cantabrigiensi prope universi. Quorum consensus, cum tam fraterne concinet et conspiret cum apologia Oxoniensi, cum scripturis, patribus, conciliis, principum nostrorum decretis, legibus, parliamentis; eant nunc mille isti, et libris nostris fere mille in hunc finem editis et conscriptis, cum erit otium et facultas, respondeant priusquam crambon toties decoctam, regi, tam prudenti, tam literato, tam imprudenter obtrudant. Aut si numerari malint, quam ponderari suffragia, cogitent homunciones miseri, ab academiis musisque relictis, quam nullius numeri sint, quam plane nihili. Valete, fratres in Christo charissimi, et nos nostramque academiam, summa vobis et studiorum et morum similitudine conjunctissimam, ut facitis, amate. Octob. 7, 1603.

Subscribed by the vice-chancellor and other the heads of that university of Cambridge.

Number CCLXXVIII.

*A proclamation for the king's coming from Barwick.
April 10, 1603.*

FORASMUCH as the king's most excellent majesty is

ANNO
1603.

graciously minded to make his speedy repair from Barwick to his highness' city of London, in which his journey he is to pass from thence through divers shires of this realm; it is notified to all sheriffs of the several counties through which his majesty shall pass, that each of them respectively, attended with the justices of the peace, and other gentlemen of the said several counties, fail not to wait on his majesty, to receive him at his first entry into the same county, whereof they are sheriffs, and to continue their attendance, until such time as he shall come to the uttermost bounds of that county; where the sheriff of the next county is in like manner to attend and receive him. And this to be so done from county to county, until he shall come to his city of London, &c. Given at the king's palace at Whitehall, the 10th of April, in the first year of his majesty's reign.

Care was also to be taken by the sheriffs, that plentiful provision be made in all counties and places, where his highness shall lodge or rest by the way, for his majesty, and such noble personages as should attend him, and also the whole company.

376

Number CCLXXIX.

A proclamation for all magistrates and officers under the late queen, to keep their places. April 5, 1603.

FORASMUCH as it cannot be doubted, but as the king's most excellent majesty hath taken great contentment in the most dutiful and devoted affection of his subjects of this realm, testified by the universal and joyful consent, in publishing his right, and acknowledgment of his highness for their sovereign, so on the other side his majesty's subjects will find much joy and comfort by receiving knowledge of his gracious and loving acceptance of their most humble and most affectionate service and duty. It was therefore very meet, that his majesty, having of late by his several letters of the 28th and of the last of March, unto such of us, the nobility of this realm, and others that were

of the late queen's privy-council, as are here at his highness' palace of Whitehall assembled for the service of his majesty and the state, signified his gracious acceptance, and princely thankfulness unto all his subjects of whatsoever degree or condition, for such and so extraordinary demonstration of their good-will; and commanding the same to be further notified to all parts, we should publish and declare the same by this proclamation in his name: and withal that we should declare and make known his majesty's pleasure, delivered likewise in the same letters, touching the necessary continuation, during his absence, until it shall please his highness to give other commandment and direction, (of such orders and proceedings for the preservation of peace, administration of justice, and government of the state, as were formerly established, and stood in force immediately before the said queen's decease;) which chiefly and in effect is this.

ANNO
1605.

The King's
letters to Q.
Elizabeth's
privy-coun-
cil.

That whereas, upon the decease of the late queen's majesty, the authority of the most part of the offices and places of jurisdiction and government within this reahn, and in the realm of Ireland, did cease and fail, the sovereign person failing from whom the same were derived: and thereupon, through doubtfulness, and want of authority for execution in such persons as were invested in the said offices and places, the settled and ordinary course of the affairs of the state (if remedy were not provided) might receive disturbance and prejudice, by discontinuance and interruption; his majesty, in his princely wisdom and care of the state, (reserving unto his own judgment hereafter his reformation and redress of any abuses in misgovernment, upon better knowledge taken there in due time,) is pleased, and hath so expressly signified, that all persons, that at the time of the late queen's majesty's decease were duly and lawfully possessed of any place or office of authority, jurisdiction, or government, either civil or martial, within this realm, or in the realm of Ireland, as namely, all lieutenants, sheriffs, deputy lieutenants, commissioners of musters, justices of the peace, &c. shall be, and shall so hold themselves, continued

ANNO in the same places and offices, until his majesty's pleasure
 1603. be further known.—

377 And albeit the earnest and longing desire in all his majesty's subjects to enjoy the sight of his royal person and presence, (which hath moved very many of good degree and quality, and some of them having place of charge in the countries where they dwell, to hasten and take their journeys at this time unto his highness,) be for itself comfortable in them, and acceptable to his majesty, being an argument of their abundant joy and gladness; nevertheless, because the over-much and too frequent resort and concourse of people unto those parts where his majesty as yet remaineth, or which are far distant from the heart of this realm, is at this present inconvenient, and may prove more dangerous, both in respect that the country whither such extraordinary resort is made shall be overcharged with multitude, and thereof scarcity and dearth is like enough to proceed; and also because these more inward parts of the realm shall in the mean time be impaired in hospitality, being destitute of such assistance as is needful, it may be doubted to what danger or disturbance, foreign or domestic, they may be exposed: his majesty therefore, in his wisdom, both graciously accepting the good-will of his subjects, and withal regarding what is convenient for his service, and for security of the state at this time, is pleased and doth require, that such concourse and resort into those parts be forborne; and above all others, of those persons that have a place of charge or office, either on the seacoast or the inland; or any of good degree and quality in their country: and that such orderly course be hereafter holden (in the discretion of all such persons aforesaid) for repair and resort to his highness's presence at his coming further into this realm, as may conveniently stand and agree with his honour and service necessarily belonging; and to be performed in all parts of the realm to his highness and the state, his majesty being no less graciously disposed, and willing in all convenient sort to give contentment and pleasure to his own

Resort to
 him forbid.

eyes and mind by the sight of his most loyal and loving subjects, than they are infinitely desirous to enjoy the happiness of his majesty's person and presence: who, we doubt not, long before this time, is already safe in this his realm of England; though his majesty forbear to come presently to his city of London, until those things can be set in readiness, which are fit and honourable for the reception of so great and mighty a king. Given at his majesty's palace of Whitehall, the 10th of April, in the first year of his majesty's reign.

God save the king.

Number CCLXXX.

378

A proclamation for uniting both kingdoms, May 19, 1603.

..... THAT it had pleased God in his great blessing to this whole island, by his majesty's lawful succession to the imperial crown of England, not only to remove this difference, [viz. of the borders, English and Scottish,] but also to furnish his highness with power and force, sufficient to prosecute his majesty's royal and worthy resolution, as his highness hath already begun: intending that the bounds, possessed by those rebellious people, [upon the borders of these realms, causing slaughters, spoils, robberies, &c.] being in fertility and all other benefits nothing inferior to many of the best parts of the whole isle, shall be no more the extremity, but the middle; and the inhabitants thereof reduced to perfect obedience, &c.

His majesty, for the better satisfaction of all his good subjects, who may stand in any doubt of the said union, and to take away all pretence of excuse from wicked and turbulent persons, hath hereby thought good to publish and make known to all those to whose knowledge these presents shall come, that as his majesty hath found in the hearts of all the best disposed subjects of the realms, of all qualities, a most earnest desire, that the said happy union should be perfected, the memory of all preterite discontentments abolished, and the inhabitants of both the realms to be the

ANNO
1603.

subjects of one kingdom; so his highness will, with all convenient diligence, with the advice of the estates and parliament of both the kingdoms, make the same to be perfected. And in the mean time, till the said union be established with the due solemnity aforesaid, his majesty doth hereby repute, hold, and esteem, and command all his highness's subjects to repute, hold, and esteem both the two realms as presently united, and as one realm and kingdom, and the subjects of both the realms as brethren and members of one body. And in regard thereof that every one of them abstain and forbear to commit any kind of robbery, bloodshed, or any other insolence or disorder, or to receive and harbour the persons, wives, children, or goods of the fugitives and outlaws of either of the realms; but to contain themselves in peace and quietness, and all such dutiful behaviour as becometh good and loyal subjects; certifying all and every person which shall do, practise, or attempt any thing to the violating of these presents, that they shall incur the punishment due to the said rebels; and that the same shall be executed against them with all rigour and extremity, to the terror of others. Given under our signet, at our manor of Greenwich, the 19th of May, 1603.

379

Number CCLXXXI.

Proclamation against monopolies and protections.

THE zeal and great affection which we have found in all sorts of people of this our kingdom toward our person, and that right which we had to the succession of this crown, hath been so many ways expressed, as we cannot choose but make it manifest to them by some public declaration, how great a desire it hath wrought in our hearts to shew our gracious acceptance of their devotion towards us, whensoever there shall be offered either occasion or subject, that may concern their universal good. For though it be true, that our right was so assured, that whatsoever testimony could thereof be uttered was but the duty of subjects, ac-

knowledging that faith and loyalty, whereunto, by the laws of God and nature, they were bound, yet do we confess, that there is in the true rules of justice from the sovereign to his subject a reciprocal office and respect which they are bound in honour and conscience to observe.

ANNO
1603.

The King's
title.

The consideration whereof hath moved us to think of such ways as for the present did occur unto us, wherein we might make manifest to our people, how willing we are now, and will be ready hereafter, to be as forward in requiting their love, as they have been in expressing it. In which consideration while we were busied, we were informed, that the queen our sister, deceased, finding, some few years before her death, that some things had passed her hands, at the importunity of her servants, whom she was willing to reward with little burden to her estate, (otherwise by necessary occasions exhausted,) which, though they had and might have foundation in princely prerogative, yet, either by too large extending thereof, or for the most part in respect that they were of such a nature as could hardly be put in use without hinderance to multitudes of people, or else committed to inferior persons, who, in the execution thereof, did so exceedingly abuse the same, as they became intolerable, had purposed to revoke all grants of that nature, and did begin with some, which were heard most unjust: putting the rest to the examination of her laws, to stand or fall, as in construction of law they might consist or not.

Reflection
upon the
queen.

Prerogative.

We, who though we had never had such an example, were ever opposite in our own nature to any thing that had colour of oppression, hold it our part, not only carefully to perfect all her good intentions, but to study further, by all good means, and with all expedition, to put in practice all other courses, whereby a people so loving, so dutiful, and so dear unto us, may know and feel, that we are as desirous to make them happy by our justice and grace toward them in all reasonable things, as they have been ready to increase our comfort and contentment, in yielding their loyalty and obedience towards our establishment in those rights, which under God we do enjoy.—

The King's
nature.

A N N O

1603.

Therefore he expressly charged and commanded, that all persons henceforth desist and forbear to use or execute any manner of charter or grant made by the late queen deceased, of any kind of monopolies, or of any power or licence to dispense with, or discharge any manner of penal laws, (except such grants only as had been made to any corporation or company of any art or mystery, or for the maintenance or enlargement of any trade or merchandise,) until such time as his said charter or grant shall be examined and allowed of by us, with the advice of our council, to be fit to be put in execution without any prejudice to our loving subjects.

And whereas heretofore many had been greatly prejudiced and delayed in suing for their debts and other duties, by sundry kinds of protections, or by pretence of other privileges and exemptions, he charged and commanded, that no protections, privileges, or exemptions, to delay any person's suit or action, should be from henceforth received or allowed in any of his courts, or elsewhere, which are or shall be contrary or repugnant to the laws of the realm.

Assignment
of debts.

And that no assignments of debts or actions be made unto us by any that is or intendeth to be in debt to us, who is otherwise able and sufficient by himself, or by his sureties, readily to pay the same debt.

Saltpetre
men.

Purveyors.

That he was informed, that many and great disorders and abuses, to the great grief of the subject, as well by saltpetre men, or such as had or intended to have commission and authority to make saltpetre, and also by sundry purveyors and takers of carts, and other provision for the king's use and service; he did expressly charge, that the said saltpetre men, purveyors, and takers, should have especial care to execute their offices and authority without any manner of oppression, grievance, or wrong to be done to his subjects.

Lawyers.

Also express charge was given to all lawyers, attorneys, officers, and clerks of and in any of the king's courts of justice, ecclesiastical or temporal, that none of them extort or take any undue or excessive fees, but only such as are allowed to be had and taken in the same courts.——

These graces above specified we do presently extend to our people; and do intend other hereafter, when we shall understand more particularly wherein we may yield them comfort.

ANNO
1603.
Graces.

But because things well meant may in the manner of them be abused, &c. we have thought good to admonish our subjects, that if they should have cause to seek any thing at the king's hands, to forbear all assembling and flocking together in multitudes; by lawful and decent manner, without numbers, without clamour, or any other kind of disorder, resort to us, or our council, by way of humble petition: from whom they shall receive such answer, as shall make manifest, that as we have regard to the observation of justice and maintenance of their welfare, if their complaints be just; and on the other side, if we shall perceive that their petition shall savour of humour, and tend only to slander and calumny; and in pretence of seeking public redresses, to utter private malice, we should have them understand hereby, that they shall not only displease us herein, but find that we hold it no less the office of a prince to protect their magistrates and officers and all public persons, in their just, than to give redress to the vulgar sort, when they have indeed cause to complain against all persons, how great soever they be in rule or dignity under us, &c. reserving to ourselves the right justly appertaining to our prerogative. For that we would not have it conceived, that in doing these things out of our grace, we do intend to renounce those ancient duties and privileges, which have descended upon us with the succession of our kingdoms.

And for that we are informed, that there hath been heretofore great neglect in this kingdom, of keeping the sabbath-day, for better observing of the same, and avoiding of all impious profanation of it, we do straitly charge and command, that no bear-baiting, bull-baiting, in their lewd common plays, or other like disordered and unlawful exercises and pastimes, be frequented, kept, or used at any time hereafter upon the sabbath-day.

Sabbath-day to be kept.

Given at our court at Theobald's, the 7th day of May, in the first year of our reign.

ANNO
1603.

Number CCLXXXII.

Proclamation commanding all Jesuits and seminary priests to avoid the realm before the 19th day of March following. Dated Feb. 22.

By the king.

Priests and
Jesuits
abound.

SHEWING how he had spent time in settling the politic affairs of the realm, and of late bestowed no small labour in composing certain differences he found among his clergy, about rites and ceremonies, heretofore established in this church of England; and reduced the same to such an order and form, as he doubted not but every spirit, that was led only with piety, and not with humour, should be therein satisfied. That it appeared unto him, in debating those matters, that a greater contagion to our religion than could proceed from those light differences, was imminent by persons, common enemies to them both; namely, the great number of priests, both seminaries and Jesuits, abounding in this realm; as well such as were here before his coming to the crown, as such as resorted hither since: using their functions and professions with greater liberty than heretofore they durst have done: partly upon a vain confidence of some innovation in matters of religion to be done by him, which we never intended, nor gave any man cause to expect; and partly upon the assurance of our general pardon, granted, according to the custom of our progenitors, at our coronation, for offences past in the days of the late queen. Which pardons many of the said priests have procured under our great seal; and holding themselves free
382 from the danger of the laws, do with great audacity exercise offices of their profession; both saying masses, persuading our subjects from the religion established, and reconciling them to the church of Rome; and by consequence seducing them from the true persuasion, which all subjects ought to have of their duty and obedience to us, &c.

Wherefore, by way of providence, to preserve the people from being corrupt in religion, piety and obedience is not the least part of royal duty, we hold ourselves obliged, both in conscience and in wisdom, to use all good means to

ANNO
1602.

keep our subjects from being infected with superstitious opinions in matters of religion, which are not only pernicious to our own souls, but the ready way and means to corrupt their duty and allegiance, which cannot be any way so surely performed, as by keeping from them the ministers and instruments of that infection; which are the priests of all sorts ordained in foreign parts, by authority prohibited by the laws of this land.

Concerning which also he published this open declaration of his pleasure, that where there were of priests at this present within our kingdom, be they regular or without rule, divers sorts, some in prison, some at liberty; and of both, some having obtained our pardon under our great seal, and some having no such pardon; and again, some that were here before our coming into this realm, and some comen hither since: for all as are in prison, we have taken order, that they shall be shipped at some convenient port, and sent out of our realm, as soon as may be, with commandment not to return again into any part of our dominions without our licence obtained, upon pain and peril of the laws, being here in force against them. And for all others who are at liberty, whether having sued out our pardon, or not, (which we do advertise them, and all our subjects,) that extending only to matters done before the death of the late queen, doth not exempt any priest from the danger of the law for his abode here, since our succession to the crown above the time by the statute limited.

Priests in
prison.

At liberty.

And all manner of Jesuits, seminaries, and other priests whatsoever, having ordination from any authority by the laws of this realm forbid, to take notice, that our pleasure is, that they do, before the 19th day of March next ensuing the date hereof, depart forth of all our realm and dominions. And for that purpose it shall be lawful to all officers of our ports to suffer the said priests to depart from thence into any foreign part betwixt this and the said 19th day of March. And after the said 19th day, such as should be taken within the realm, or should after return into the realm, to be left to the penalty of the law here in force

ANNO
1603.

concerning them, without hope of any favour or remission from us.

We will and command all archbishops, bishops, lieutenants, justices of peace, &c. to be vigilant and careful after the said 19th day, to do their duties and diligence, in discovering and apprehending of all priests that shall remain here, contrary to this declaration.

The reason
of this order.

It may seem to some to presage a greater severity towards that sort of subjects, who call themselves catholics, than by our proceedings with them hitherto we have given cause to

383 expect: yet doubt we not, but that when it shall be considered with indifferent judgment what causes have moved us to use this providence against the said Jesuits and priests, all men will justify us therein. For to whom is it unknown, into what peril our person was like to be drawn, and our realm unto confusion, not many months since, by a con-

spiracy. spiracy first conceived by persons of that sort? Who having prevailed with some, had undertaken to draw multitudes of others to assist the same by the authority of their persuasion and motive, grounded chiefly upon matter of conscience and religion. Which when other princes shall duly observe, we assure ourselves they will no way conceive that this alteration groweth from any change of disposition, no more exasperate than heretofore; but out of necessary providence to prevent perils, otherwise inevitable. Considering, that their absolute submission to foreign jurisdiction, at their first taking of orders, doth leave so conditional an authority to kings over their subjects, as the same power by which they were made may dispense at pleasure with the strictest band of loyalty and love betwixt a king and his people.

Beholden
to the pope,
as secular
prince.

Among which foreign powers, although we acknowledge ourselves personally so much beholden to the now bishop of Rome for his kind offices and private temporal carriage towards us in many things, as we shall be ever ready to requite the same toward him, (as bishop of Rome in state and condition, as a secular prince,) yet when we consider and observe the course and claim of that see, we have no reason

to imagine that princes of our religion and profession can expect any assurance long to continue; unless it might be assented by the mediation of other princes Christian, that some good might be taken by a general council, free and lawfully called, to pluck up those roots of dangers and jealousies, which arise for cause of religion, as well between princes and princes, as between them and their subjects; and to make it manifest, that no state or potentate either hath or can challenge power to dispose of earthly kingdoms and monarchies, or to dispense with subjects' obedience to their natural sovereigns. In which charitable action there is no prince living that will be readier than we shall be to concur, even to the uttermost of our power; not only out of particular disposition to live peaceably with all states and princes of Christendom, but because such a settled amity might (by an union in religion) be established among Christian princes, as might enable us all to resist the common enemy.

ANNO
1601.

General
council.

Given at our palace of Westminster, the 22d day of February, in the first year of our reign over England, &c. and of Scotland the thirty-seventh.

Number CCLXXXIII.

384

Proclamation declaring at what values certain monies of Scotland shall be current within England. April 8.

..... HIS majesty knowing in his princely wisdom how necessary it is for commerce and trade between his loving subjects of both kingdoms, that the true value, at which certain pieces of his majesty's coin of Scotland should be current within his kingdom of England, should be certainly known and published to all his loving subjects; and finding upon trial, from certificate from his majesty's officers of the mint within his Tower of London, (upon commandment given unto them in that behalf,) that the coin of Scotland, called the *sixpound-piece* of gold, is of the finest of 22 carats, and that six of those pieces do make an ounce: and also that the coin of Scotland, called the *mark-piece* of silver, is of

ANNO the value of 13*d. ob.* sterling; hath therefore published
 1603. and declared, that the said coin of gold, called *sixpound-piece*, shall be from henceforth current within his majesty's kingdom of England, at the value of 10*s.* sterling; and that the said coin of silver, called the *mark-piece*, shall be from henceforth current within the kingdom of England, at the value of 13*d. ob.*

Given at his majesty's palace of Whitehall, the 8th of April, in the first year of his reign, &c.

Number CCLXXXIV.

A proclamation touching a meeting for the hearing and determining things pretended to be amiss in the church.

GIVEN under our hand at Wilton, the 24th of October, 1603.

This may be read in the Life of Archbishop Whitgift, book iv. chap. 31. Which proclamation produced the conference at Hampton-court.

Number CCLXXXV.

Proclamation for calling a parliament. Jan. 11, 1603.

385 THAT it was his desire to have summoned them long since, if the infection, reigning in the city of London and other places of the kingdom, would have permitted the course of so great a multitude into one place.....Which contagion being abated, and shortly, we hope, quite extinct, resolved to hold a parliament, as soon as he should find the same might be done without peril. In which, as God doth know, we have nothing to propound for satisfaction of any private desire, or particular profit of our own, but merely and only to consult and resolve with our loving subjects, of all those things which may best establish the public good, with the general safety and tranquillity of this reahn.—

ANNO
1603.

And as it is the first in our reign, so that it may be a precedent hereafter for the true use of parliaments, we have bethought ourselves of as many ways and means as may be, to prevent those inconveniencies which daily arise and multiply by the perverting of those ancient good orders, which were devised by the wisdom of former times, to be observed in calling of parliaments. Among which, because there is no one point of greater consequence than the well choosing of knights and burgesses, who, as they do present the body of the third estate, so, being eligible by multitude, there are often unfit persons appointed for that service.....He did therefore straitly charge and admonish all persons interest in the choice of knights for the shire, first, that knights for the county be selected out of the principal knights or gentlemen of sufficient ability within that county. And for the burgesses, the choice to be made of men of sufficiency and discretion, without any partial respects or factious combination.....And that seeing the dealing in causes of parliament requireth convenience of years and experience, great heed be taken, by all those that would be accounted lovers of their country, that knights and burgesses be chosen accordingly, without desire in any particular man to please parents or friends, that often speak for their children or kin, though they be very young, and little able to discern what laws are fit to bind a commonwealth.....Those persons to be selected principally, of whose gravity and modest conversation men are likeliest to conceive best opinion.....

And considering that one of the main pillars of the state is the preservation of unity in the profession of sincere religion, he did admonish great care to be taken to avoid the choice of any person, either noted for their superstitious blindness one way, or for their turbulent humour the other way.....

Further, express care to be taken, that there be not chosen any person bankrupts or outlawed; but men of known good behaviour and sufficient livelihood.....Sheriffs to be charged that they do not direct any precepts for electing and returning any burgesses to or for any ancient

ANNO
1603.

borough-town within their counties, being so utterly ruined and defaced, that there are not sufficient resident to make such choice, and of whom lawful election may be made..... No city or borough to sell any blanks, referring the leaving to any others to insert the names of any citizens or burgesses to serve for any city or borough; but that the inhabitants do make open and free election according to the law, and set down the names of the persons whom they choose before they seal the certificate.

Given at our honour of Hampton-Court, the 11th of January, the first year of our reign of England, France, and Ireland, and of Scotland the 37th.

386

Number CCLXXXVI.

King James his answer in French to the members of the Dutch church in London; upon their address to him at his first coming to the crown. Ex minore MS to archivorum eccles. Belgic. Anno 1603.

Messieurs,

ENCORES que vous ne m'avez veu jusques a present. si estre que je ne vous suis point estranger, ni incognu. Vous scavez quant a ma religion, quel je suis, non seulement par le bruit que vous avez peu entendre de moi, mais aussi par mes escrits, esquels j'ay veritablement exprime quel est l'affection de mon ame. Cest par quoy je n'ay besoin d'user de beaucoup de paroles pour vous représenter ma bonne volonté envers vous, qui estes ici refugiez pour la religion.

Je recognoy, que deux choses ont rendu la royne ma sœur defuncte renommée par tout le monde, l'une est le desire que elle a tousjours eu d'entretenir et fomentier le service de Dieu en ce royaume. Et l'autre est son hospitalité envers les estrangers; a la louange de laquelle je veux heriter.

Je scay bien par le tesmoinage des seigneurs de ce royaume (comme vous m'avez dit) que vous avez tousjours

prié Dieu pour elle, et que n'avez outrepassé votre devoir. Je scay aussi, que vous avez enrichi ce royaume de plusieurs artifices, manufactures, et sciences politiques. ANNO
1601.

Si l'occasion se fut présentée, lors que j'estois encores esloigné comme en un coin du monde, je vous eusse fais paroistre ma bonne affection. Mais comme je n'ay jamais taché, ne voulu empieter sur le bien d'aucun prince, aussi puis que maintenant il a plu a Dieu me faire roy de ce pais, je vous jure, que si queleun vous moleste en vos eglises, vous adressant a moi, je vous vengeray. Et encores que vous ne soiez pas de mes propres sujets, si est, ce que je vous maintiendray, et fomenterauy autant que prince qui soit au monde.

The same in English.

Gentlemen,

Although you have never seen me before now, yet I cannot be wholly a stranger, nor unknown to you. As to religion, you must needs know how I stand affected, not only from the report you may have heard of me, but also from my writings, wherein I have truly expressed what the affliction of my soul is. And therefore I need not use many words to declare my good-will towards you, who have taken refuge here for the sake of religion.

I am sensible that two things have made the queen my deceased sister famous throughout the world; the one was the desire she always had of keeping up and maintaining the service of God in this kingdom; and the other was her 387 hospitality towards strangers, which excellent qualities of hers I would inherit.

I am very well assured from the testimony which the lords of the kingdom bear of you of the truth of what you told me, viz. that you always prayed for her, [the queen,] and have in nothing transgressed the bounds of your duty. I am sensible likewise that you have enriched this kingdom with several arts, manufactures, and political sciences.

Had opportunity offered, when I lived at a great distance off, and as it were in a corner of the world, I had given

ANNO
1609.

you some token of my good affection towards you. But as I never did endeavour, nor had an inclination, to encroach upon the property of any prince, so now, since it has pleased God to make me king of this country, I swear to you, that if any one should give you disturbance in your churches, upon your application to me, I will revenge your cause. And although you be none of my proper subjects, yet will I maintain and cherish you, as much as any prince in the world can.

Number CCLXXXVII.

A proclamation, authorizing commissioners concerning the union of both kingdoms.

Anno 1604. WHERE at the last session of our parliament of this our realm of England, one act is made authorizing certain persons of both houses to assemble and meet thereupon, to treat and consult with certain select commissioners to be nominated and authorized by authority of the parliament of our realm of Scotland, for the weal of both kingdoms, at any time before the next sessions of this parliament. And a like act is passed in our parliament for our realm of Scotland, to give authority to commissioners, nominated for that nation. For the performance whereof it is necessary that a certain time be prefixed. We do therefore hereby make known and publish to all our loving subjects, who are commissioners for the act appointed for that treaty, as well of one nation as of the other, that we have found it expedient for the commissioners of both realms, to appoint the first day of the said meeting to be on the 20th day of October, next ensuing the date hereof: at our city of Westminster, in the chamber of our palace there, called the *painted chamber*. Whereof we require them all, and all others whom it may concern, to take knowledge; and to keep the day and place accordingly.

Given at our castle of Windsor, the 15th day of September, in the second year of our reign.

Number CCLXXXVIII.

ANNO

1604.

Proclamation for coins.

388

.....WE have always been of opinion, that just princes should not use the liberty of their power in abasing or enhancing the prices of monies, without all respect to the common benefits of their subjects. In which consideration it is evident to all men, that since our entry into this realm, we have been so far from changing the ancient and honourable standard of the sterling money of this our realm of England, as we have, on the contrary, restored to our realm of Ireland monies of pure silver, in lieu of the base coin, with which the necessity of the time, by the accident of the wars, constrained our sister, the late queen of happy memory, to pay the armies.

Nevertheless it falling out at our first coming out of Scotland (where we had coins of gold and silver, not then current in this realm) to be impossible for our nobility, and other servants and subjects, attending us in our journey hither, to be provided of current monies of this realm, for their expenses, so soon as our speed required; we did then give valuation to coin of gold of Scotland, called the 6 lib. piece, to be current here for 10s. of silver, and to be equal with the English angel, or sovereign of gold. The authorizing whereof coming lately into consideration, among other points recommended by us to be treated, for the weal of both kingdoms, by some of our council of each of them, it hath appeared, that the inconvenience is fit to be removed. Which groweth by our authorizing it to be equal to the gold coins of England; and that it is not worth, in the value, 10s. of our silver money of England; but because that the English coins of gold are not in regard of the silver coins of the true proportions betwixt gold and silver, accustomed in all nations.

Whereupon our council, having occasion to enter into further consideration of the money of this realm, with the assistance of the officers of the mint, it appeareth very visibly, that this error in the proportion of the gold monies

ANNO
1604.

of England to the silver, hath been a great cause of the transportation of gold out of this realm into foreign countries in such quantity as of late years hath been used. Because the said gold monies are more worth in their true value, than here they were allowed. To which inconvenience long endured, being now resolved to give remedy, we have cast new coins, both of gold and silver, to be made of several stamps, weights, and values; but of one uniform standard and allay, to be current within this our kingdom of Great Britain. That is to say,

1. One piece of gold of the value of 20s. sterling, to be called the *unite*; stamped on the one side with our picture formerly used, with this our style, *Jacob. D. G. Mag. Brit. Fran. & Hib. Rex.* And on the other side, our arms crowned, and with this word, *Faciám eos in gentem unam.*

389 2. One other gold money of 10s. to be called the *double crown.*

3. And one other gold money of 5s. to be called the *Britain crown.* On the one side with our picture accustomed, and the style as aforesaid. And on the other side our arms, and this word, *Henricus Rosas, Regna Jacobus.* [That is, *unit*, or *jungit*.]

4. One other piece of 4s. to be called the *thistle crown*; having on the one side a rose crowned, and our title, *Ju. D. G. Mag. Br. F. & H. Rex.* And on the other side, a thistle flower crowned, with this word, *Tueatur unita Deus.*

5. Also pieces of 2s. 6d. to be called *half crowns*, with our picture accustomed, and this word, *J. D. G. Rosa sine Spina.* And on the other side our arms, and this word, *Tueatur unita Deus.*

And for silver monies.

1. Pieces of 5s. and of 2s. 6d. Having on the one side our picture on horseback, and our style aforesaid.

2. Pieces of 12d.—6d. Having our picture formerly used, and our style as aforesaid. And on the other side our arms, and this word, *Quæ Deus conjunxit, nemo separet.*

3. Also pieces of 2d. Having on the one side a rose crowned; and about it, *J. D. G. Rosa sine Spina.* And on the other side, a thistle flower crowned. And about it, *Tucatur unita Deus.* ANNO
1604.

And one penny. Having on the one side a rose, and on the other side a thistle flower: and about it, *J. D. G. Rosa sine Spina.* And on the other side a thistle flower: and about it, *Tucatur unita Deus.*

5. And the halfpenny, having on the one side a rose, and on the other side a thistle flower

And with this proclamation was a printed table, expressing the true values and weights of the coins, according to the accounts of the mint-men of both nations.

Number CCLXXXIX.

Upon the remove of bishop Bancroft from London to Canterbury, ann. 1604, the Dutch and French congregations made, to Dr. Vaughan, his successor, the address following. E MSS. eccl. Belgic. London.

Reverendissime et doctissime præsul,

ECCLESIARUM peregrinarum hujus temporii fert consuetudo, ut quotiescunque episcopus ad hujus diocesios gubernaculum constituitur, pium et debitum congratulationis officium ejus dignitati persolvamus. In hunc itaque finem ab ecclesiis nostris, Belgica videlicet et Gallica deputati venimus, et nobis dicentibus, animum benevolum auresque benignas præberi etiam atque etiam rogamus.

Tria autem, quam poterimus, brevissime dignitati vestræ exponere decrevimus. Non quod viro amplissimo, rerumque expertissimo, quicquam, quod non probe ipsi ante sit perspectum, declarare possimus, sed ut gratitudinis et benevolentiae testimonium aliquod apud ipsum relinquamus.

Primum itaque tribus verbis, ecclesie nostræ statum dicemus. Secundo, episcoporum præcedentium de eis curam. Tertio, addemus nostrum votum.

ANNO
1604.

1. Ecclesiæ nostræ, clarissime præsul, ab anno 1550, in celebri hoc emporio, Edwardi Sexti, summæ spei principis, diplomate, verum pietatis cultum sermone sibi vernaculo, exercuerunt; donec triennio vix expleto, persecutione Mariana (quæ piis omnibus erat luctuosa) alio sese conferrent. Anno autem 1558. rebus in Anglia per successionem Elizabethæ, religionis reformatæ amantissimæ, restitutis, iterum paulatim huc, tanquam ad asylum, confugere cœperant. Illa miseros, et patria ab Hispano, Albano, Guisianis, Parmensi, ejectos, gremio suo (vera in Israele mater) suavissime excepit et fovit, loco et privilegiis ab Edwardo datis nobis in integrum restitutis. Quam libertatem intactam nobis relictam voluit magnus ejus et toto orbe celeberrimus successor Jacobus. Habuerunt toto hoc temporis decursu viros pietate et eruditione insignes ecclesiam sibi commissam bene, fideliter invigilantes, pacem et fraternitatem cum ecclesiis Anglicanis colentes, quorum memoria apud nos adhuc est, semperque erit, in benedictione. Habent etiam nunc fidei pastores, antecessorum vestigiis insistentes.

2. Venio ad hujus diocesos rev. episcopos, et eorum de nobis curam, et in nos beneficentiam. Constat ex archivis nostris, quam nos amanter exceperit in restitutione nostra piissimus ille Grindallus; quid ad componendas controversias quasdam intempestivas, egerit prudentissimus ille Edwinus Sandes: denique quam fraterne omnes nobis suam obtulerint operam. Idem a rev. tua dignitate certo nobis pollicemur; multis pietate, eruditione, rerum experientia, et humanitate singulari excellentior. Celebris est tua eruditio, pietas, et eloquentia, in aula, in academia, in hac civitate, totoque regno. Non potuit itaque non corda nostra singulari gaudio adficere, quod vir tantus et talis ecclesiis hujus diocesos præficiatur. Hoc ergo munus in se dignum et excellens personæ condignæ et excellenti congratulamur: addito voto.

3. Cum divina id acciderit providentia, Deo Opt. Max. pro singulari sua misericordia gratiose placeat tuam dignitatem Sancti sui Spiritus virtute ita adornare et corroborare,

ut, ut gloria Dei per eam promoveatur, ecclesia Dei ædificetur, hostes ecclesiæ confundantur, omnes difficultates, tantæ vocationis comites, superentur, et magna certaque merces a Jesu Christo ἀρχιποιμένι aliquando concedatur.

ANNO
1604.

Number CCXC.

391

Cecil lord Cranborn, secretary of state to Hutton, archbishop of York, concerning orders sent from the privy-council, for putting in execution the laws against puritans.

In answer to the said archbishop's letter, dated Dec. 18, 1604. Writing concerning the state of religion in those parts, with respect to the popish or puritan factions; and of their great apprehensions chiefly of the papists at that time, and of their resort to London; and that it was high time to look to them. Putting the said lord Cranborn in mind, that he was born and brought up in true religion, and his worthy father a worthy instrument to banish superstition, and to advance the gospel. The archbishop added, that he loved and honoured his most excellent majesty, but wished less waste in the treasure of the realm, and more moderation in the lawful exercise of hunting, both that poor men's corn might be less spoiled, and his majesty's subjects more spared. That the papists gave forth, that the ecclesiastical commission should not be renewed: praying his honour to further it, and that indeed it had stayed very long. This whole letter may be found in the Appendix to the Life of Archbishop Whitgift, Number I. The lord Cranborn's answer is as follows.

May it please your grace,

ALTHO' your letter lately written unto me, conteyned rather an acknowledgment of your receipt of my lords of the counsell's letters, then any other subject, requiringe present answer for myself, yet when I considered the several partes of the same, I resolved no longer to adventure your lordship's censure of my silence. First, because your

ANNO
1601.

place and yeares deserve too great a respect and reverence to be forgotten by my father's sonne, whome I have heard soe often speake of your zealous care and industry to free the church of God from superstition and idolatry, even in tyme of greatest difficulty, to effect soe religious a worke. Of which, although I have cause to speake by former tradition, then by any late particular knowledge, because the greatest harvest of your labours were in a manner iuned, before my springe tyme; yet it is comfortable to me, *fructus*

392 *natum evangelio renato*, and shal be greivous for me to enjoye any state of life, which I should be unwilling to laye down for the same.

Secondly, I would be loath, that your lordship, who have ever loved the truth, should live in such a darknes, through want of better instruction, as might obscure to you, either his majesties owne cleare, zealous, and constant resolution, for the preservation of true religion, or the serious cares of my lords of his privy-counsell, to have his godlye and just lawes executed.

For your lordships opinion concerninge the differences in our church, I do subscribe *ex animo* to your grave and learned judgment in that and all things else of that nature, havinge alwayes held it for a certaine rule (since I had any knowledge) that the papiste was carryed on the left hand with superstitious blyndnes, that the puritane (as your lordship termes them) was transported on the right, with unadvised zeale and *outré envieance*. The first punishable for matters essential; the second necessary to be corrected for disobedience to the lawful ceremonies of the church, wherein although many religious men of moderate spirites might be borne with, yet such are the turbulent humors of some, that dreame of nothinge but of a new hyrarchie, directly opposite to the state of monarchy, as the dispensation with such men were the high waye to breake al bonds of unity, to nourishe schisme in the church, and finally to destroy both church and commonwealt. It is wel said of a learned man, that there are schismes in habite, as well as in opinion: *et non serratur unitus in credendo, nisi adsit in colendo*:

ANNO
1604.

and therefore where your lordship seemeth to speake fearfully, as if in labouringe to reform the one, there were some purpose to tollerate the other. I must crave pardon of your lordship to reply thus much, 'til I heare you touch particulars, that it is not a sure foundation to builde upon bruites; *nam linguæ magister populus*. And all their phrases of, They say, are the common mothers and nurses of slaunder. Neither can I be perswaded otherwise, forasmuch as I have observed in the place I have held, within compass whereof, some more then vulgar bruites do fal, but that whosoever shal behold the papistes with puritane spectacles, or the puritan with papistical, shal see no other certeyntye, than the multiplication of false images.

Besydes, my lord, yf that shold be true which your lordship reportes, (which God forbid,) that popery and papistes should increase in those quarters, geve me leave to tel your lordship that you must either provide to defend your owne challenge against yourself, and blame your owne subordinates, if they have dispensed, or els make knowne who they are which geve impediment to that tymelye worke of reformation, for which you are soe wel authorized by our religious sovereigne. And therein, my lord, I doubt not but your lordship shal alwayes find a discreet and diligent conductor, of the L. President, a noble man, of whome his majestie and the state have reason to expect al good and religious endeavors: so let me take the boldnes to assure thus much, that your lordship shal never want any further ampliation of your authoritie, whensoever you shall desire it of his majestie or his privy-counsell, for any matter tendinge to the suppressinge of the Romish superstition. And, my lord, it wil be hard for them, though 393 they had the eyes of Argus, to worke any great effect in any place, where the hands of execution wil discover feares, before there be cause of doubts.

And now for that which concerns myself, to whome your lordship hath geven a freindly caveate, under the tytle of a great counsellor, not to procure or yeild to any tolleration, a matter which I wel knewe noe creature livinge dare pro-

ANNO
1604.

pound to our religious sovereign; although I am farr from the vanytye to esteeme my fortune worthy the style of greatness, yet dare I confidently professe, that I wil be much lesse then I am, or rather nothings at al, before I shal ever become an instrument of such a miserable change. For the rest, which is the moral parte of your letter, wherein you observe some extraordinary proportion of his majesties gifts and expences, I acknowledge that memorial to be worthy your lordship's yeares and experience; and yet I must say, that bounty is a kinges qualitie, that it hath ever bene held, *regum ditare, et non ditescere*; that al great princes at their first entryes are tyed partly for their owne humors, partly out of merite, and often in the true rules of pollicye, to be less sparinge of liberality, *in primis auspiciis, quam in imperio firmato*: wherein as his majestie doth dayly use convenient moderation, accordinge to the change of tymes and occasion, so hath he left a monument beyond example of his natural care and princely providence, by passing lately an intaile to the value of one hundred thousand marks sterlinge per annum; wherein he hath absolutely concluded himselfe from al power of any after separation from his royal yssue.

For the last point in your letter concerninge huntinge, seeinge I perceive you have soe indiscreet clarkes, as they are like to make my letters as common as they have made your owne, my ende beinge only now in serious thinges to shew you in private what I am to you, as wel as to my selfe, I think it impertinent to spend any tyme in discourse of that, least men that see the passages betwene us may thinke that you and I doe both of us forget our accompts for other tallents, which we have in keeping. Onely this shal be my conclusion, that as it was a prayse in the good emperour Trajan to be disposed to such manlike and active recreations, so ought it to be joy to us to behold our kinge of so hable a constitution, promisinge so long life, and blessed with so plentiful a posteritie, as hath freed our minds from all those feares, which did besiege this potent monarchy, for lack of publick declaration of his lyneal and lawfull

succession to the same, whilst it pleased God to continue ANNO
to the fulnes of dayes our late sovereigne of famous me- 1604.
mory. And so for this tyme I commit, &c.

[*There is no date, but the whole is truly copied from a MS. entitled, Registrum Vagum, formerly belonging to Dr. Jegon, bishop of Norwich, since to Dr. More, late bishop of [Norwich] and Ely, and now in the royal library at Cambridge.*] T. B. S. T. B.

Number CCXCI.

340

The address of the Dutch church in London to Bancroft, bishop of London, upon his remove to Canterbury, ann. 1604, when monsieur de la Fontain, preacher of the French church, made this speech to him.

Reverendissime pater, observandè Domine ;

QUOD jam pridem moris fuit, et instituti nostri, quos divina Providentia, et regis voluntas ad archiepiscopatus functionem exexerit, eos ecclesiarum nostrarum nomine, quam officiosissime salutaremus ; id nunc in dignitatis vestrae gratiam praestamus, ei fausta omnia precamur ; et a Deo suppliciter petimus, ut ad tanti muneris functionem Spiritum illum suum veræ sapientiæ et prudentiæ, pietatis et moderationis vestrae dignitati largiatur, ad sui nominis gloriam, et ecclesiae adificationem. Hoc illud est quod primum volumus. Cæteram cum amplissimi viri antecessores vestri in hac eadem sede constituti, summa nos semper humanitate exceperunt, benevolentiaque et favore ecclesias nostras foverint, et adhuc sunt prosecuti, eandem nos humanitatem et benevolentiam a vestra dignitate obnixè petimus, et speramus. Quemadmodum et nos mutuam gratitudinem erga vos perpetuamque spondemus.

Hæc pauca, ne plusquam par est, dignitati vestrae molestissimus, dicenda habuimus.

This salutation was friendly taken.

ANNO
1604.

Number CCXCII.

*The speech of monsieur de la Fontain to Dr. Vaughan, now
the succeeding bishop of London, anno 1604.*

Reverende pater, observande Domine,

QUO primum tempore lux veritatis in hoc amplissimo regno effulsit, quum Josiæ illius Britannici Edwardi Sexti, piissimæ memoriæ regis gratia et auspiciis, annuentibus totis parlamenti comitiis, ecclesiæ nostræ, id est, exterorum constituerentur eis quoque designatus est inspector, *superintendentis titulo*, Johannes a Lasco, Polonus; ut et restitutis ecclesiis, benevolentia et auctoritate Elizabethæ, nunquam satis pro meritis laudatæ reginæ, Johannes Utenhiovius, et ipse multis virtutibus insignis, natione Flander, hoc idem munus inter nos sortitus obivit: quum deinde reverendus pater, Edmundus Grindallus, episcopatum Londinensem obtineret, eum sibi patronum et superintendentem ecclesiæ exterorum exoptarunt: quod munus ex augustissimæ reginæ voluntate in se susceptum, cum summa sane humanitate, 395 et erga nos propensione, est executus. Ab eo tempore reverend. patres, Londinenses episcopos, quamprimum ad hoc munus capessendum accesserunt, officiose salutavimus, nobis patronos benevolos, et nostri studiosos experti sumus.

Hac eadem de causa dignitatem vestram interpellamus, officiosissime salutamus, precibus nostris Deo Opt. Max. commendamus, ut donis Spiritus sancti eximiis, et ad tantum munus idoneis instructus, bonorum omnium expectationem, in promovenda Dei gloria, et ædificanda Christi ecclesia, non modo sustinere, sed etiam superare possit.

Nobis autem ut eam benevolentiam, et auctoritatis præsidium, quale ab antecessoribus vestris experti sumus, exhibere digneris, obnixè rogamus. Ac postremo ut de nobis omnibus eadem polliceamur, et expectetis officia, quæ nos deceant, et quibus sinceram gratitudinem nostram testemur.

Hæc pauca honoris causa, Flandriæ et Gallicæ ecclesiæ nomine, dignitati vestræ dicenda habuimus.

Number CCXCIII.

ANNO
1604.*The bishop of London's answer.*

AGO vobis gratias maximas, fratres charissimi, quod me tam humaniter salutaveritis. Scio Johannem a Lasco fuiss. virum præstantissimum, ornatum multis dotibus animi et ingenii, et reliqui mei antecessores fuerunt sane viri præclari. Quare dubium non est, quin patrocínio suo tutati sunt vestras ecclesias cum quibus idem in doctrina esset consensus. Quod ad petitionem vestram attinet, ei libenter subscribo. Novi ecclesias vestras annos jam viginti quinque. Scio hoc regnum beneficia ab eis percepisse. Scio eas pacificas esse, et quietas, et nostris ecclesiis posse esse utiles; in quibus Diabolus, dissidii autor dissentionis ignem accendere cepit. Cui ne oleum adfundetis, peto: sed potius vestris consiliis et precibus restinguere conamini.

Ego siqua in re vobis usui esse potero, non decro, sed quemadmodum antecessores mei fecerunt, vos defendam. Hæc dixi subito: et dicendi desuetudine, forte non ita Latine.

Number CCXCIV.

De la Fountain's present reply to the bishop's speech.

NOS nec in sermone, nec in re ipsa aliquid deprehendimus, quod sit tanto viro indignum. Quare summas pro summa humanitate ac benevolentia dignitati tuæ debemus gratias. Quod ad dissidium attinet, quod jam ecclesias Anglicanas turbat, fieri non potest, ut id ignoremus, et ut animos nostros non pungeret ingenti dolore; sed memores sumus nos esse peregrinos, qui rebus alienis nequaquam nos immiscere debeamus. Si tamen nostris consiliis aut opera ecclesiæ 396 pacem promovere possimus, et ignem hunc restinguere, non modo omni studio libenter id faceremus, sed etiam vitam nostram ad pacem hanc redimendam, profunderemus.

ANNO
1604.

Number CCXCV.

A convocation, ann. primo Jacobi regis, 1603. collected and taken from the register.

SEDE archiepiscopi vacante. Begun at St. Paul's the 20th of March, 1603.

The writ of summons first issued to archbp. Whitgift.

The king's second writ (the archbishop being dead before the meeting) was, to the dean and chapter of Canterbury (rejoicing the former) to proceed in the assembling of the convocation.

The dean and chapter of Canterbury's first commission to the bishop of London, *ad interessend. et praesident.* Dated the 12th of March, 1603.

The dean and chapter's second commission, upon the king's writ to them of summons to be to the bishop of London, to be present, and preside. Dated the 17th of March, 1603.

Sess. 2. 23d of March, 1603, at St. Paul's. The procurator presented, viz. Dr. Ravis, and approved.

Sess. 3. March 30, 1604. The king's letters to hasten a collection for the town of Geneva.

Sess. 5. April 13, 1604. The bishop of London, president, bringeth in the king's licence to make canons. Dated April 12, 1604. Entered at large. Appointeth a committee of bishops to confer with the speaker, and others of the house of commons, about complaints before them brought against the clergy. And that the bishops should also tell the said speaker and commons of grievances put upon the clergy by the laity.

The bishop of London, president, maketh a substitution of the bishops of Winton, Lincoln, Wigorn, Bath, Chichester, Exon, Ely, Peterburgh, Hereford, Norwich, Overal, dean of St. Paul's, and Dr. Stanhope, vicar-general, to preside in his place.

Sess. 7. April 8. [18.] The bishop of London tells the lower house, that the speaker and commons refuse their consultation, and have made their complaints to the lords.

The king's second licence to make canons. Dated June 25, 1604. ANNO
1604.

Sess. 11. May 2. The bishop of London delivereth the prolocutor a book of canons; desiring him to a commission of eight or ten, to consider of them.

A petition by Egerton, Fleetwood, Wootton, Clark, and others, for reformation of the Book of Common Prayer; imparted to the lower house, in presence of the petitioners.

The bishop of London and bishops admonish the petitioners to be obedient, and conform, together with their adherents, before St. John Baptist's next.

Sess. 13. A commission of both houses to conclude the 397 book of canons, and despatch it.

Sess. 16. May 18. The king's letter with the articles, 1562, to be by the convocation approved and allowed.

The articles read and subscribed by both houses: and the book so subscribed to be kept by the bishop of London and president.

Sess. 17. May 23. A debate about the cross in baptism.

Sess. 19. May 30. The prolocutor complaineth to the bishop, that he had two subpoenas served upon him by Harrington and Walker, notwithstanding the privilege. The president's answer, that the king was acquainted with it, and that Walker was arrested for it by a sergeant at mace; and a warrant gone for Harrington.

Sess. 21. Walker abovesaid convented before the bishops, and sent to the lower house to beg pardon of the prolocutor and house. Which he did, and was dismissed *pro tempore*.

Sess. 24. June 13. Complaint of a book printed, called *Limbomastix*, railing against the ecclesiastical function. Committed.

Sess. 32. June 24. Harrington brought upon his knees, for serving a subpoena upon the prolocutor.

Sess. 34, 35, 36. Conference about some canons.

Sess. 37. The king's writ to prorogue the convocation to the 8th of February, 1604. The dean and chapter's com-

ANNO mission to the bishop of London to execute it. Prorogued
1604. accordingly to St. Paul's.

After this the canons of 1603 were printed and published
Sess. 33. Feb. 8, 1604. Archbishop Bancroft being then
made. The king's writ, reciting all his former writs of hold-
ing and proroguing. Prorogueth to the 4th of Oct. 1605.

Sess. 39. Oct. 4. The convocation again prorogued by
commission of the archbishop, (in pursuance of the king's
writ, inserted in the body of the commission, to the bishop
of London,) to the 6th of November, 1605.

*The convocation 1603. tertio Jacobi, Nov. 6, continued by
prorogation to that date.*

Sess. 1. Nov. 6. Archbishop Bancroft commendeth
Dr. Overal, dean of St. Paul's, to be chosen prolocutor, in
the room of Dr. Ravis, made bishop of Gloucester. Ad-
journd to Westminster-abbey.

Sess. 3. Dr. Overal presented prolocutor. Jan. 24, 1605.

Sess. 4. Jan. 24. The archbishop delivereth a book, drawn
up, concerning the state of the church. Desireth both houses
to take copies, and consult about it. [This may be seen at
large in the consultation of the members, and their appro-
bation, in Bishop Overal's *Convocation Book*, MDCVI. con-
cerning the government of the church. At the end whereof
are these words written: *Hæc omnia superscripta ter lecta
sunt in domo inferiori convocationis, in frequenti synodo
cleri, et unanimi consensu comprobata. Ita testor,*

April 16, 1606. *Johannes Overal, prolocutor.*]

This convocation book was afterwards printed in the year
1690.

Sess. 5. Jan. 29. The archbishop bringeth in the king's
398 licence to make canons.

Sess. 12. Feb. 21. The lower house called up. One
Cartwright appeareth: who having killed a clergyman, and
obtained the king's pardon, beggeth pardon, and absolution
of the bishops. But not having the king's pardon there, he
was dismissed to a further consideration of his petition.

Sess. 19. March 19. Agreement by both houses to grant four subsidies. The draught of it committed to the bishops of Winton, Exon, Ely. ANNO
1604.

Sess. 21, 22, 23, 24. Suspension of contumacious, non-comparants: and absolution of some.

Sess. 25. April 2, 1606. The subsidy granted brought in, engrossed, for four subsidies of 4*s*. at eleven payments half yearly, 18*d*. for ten payments, and the eleventh 12*d*. The first payment to be October 2, 1606: the last payment October 2, 1611. [that is, for five years.]

Sess. 26, 27, 28. Absolution of Dr. Tooker, dean of Litchfield, and another from suspension, as non-comparants: and the suspension of Dr. Sterne, suffragan bishop of Colchester, for not appearing.

Sess. 38. May 28, 1606. The prolocutor desireth the archbishop, that whereas by reason of the long continuance of the convocation, the clerks of the convocation had been at extraordinary expenses, a competent sum might be allowed towards their great charges by the parsons and vicars, over and above the usual and accustomed allowance towards their great charges. The archbishop and bishops thereupon ordered, that for the first sessions they should have the old and ordinary allowance, and for the other sessions after, the moiety of the first old allowance.

The king's writ for prorogation to the 19th of November, 1606, was read. Prorogued to Westminster.

Convocation continued by prorogation, and re-begun 5to Jacobi at St. Paul's.

Sess. 3. Nov. 21. The archbishop telleth the lower house, that the king hath consented to put a restraint upon prohibitions.

Sess. 11. Feb. 18, 1606. The archbishop declareth to both houses the king's pleasure to singing and organ-service.

Sess. 4. Feb. 27. The archbishop proposeth a book writ in folio; [of what subject not written:] causeth his secretary to read some leaves.

ANNO
1604.

The convocation continued by prorogation to Feb. 10, 1609.

Sess. 3,—4,—19. In the 11th and 18th sessions, some chapters of the written book brought in by archbishop Bancroft (mentioned before) were read.

Sess. 20. May 9, 1610. Conference with the lower house, of the modern estate of the church: value and polity of benefices: smallness of some benefices; tithes received by lay hands, and enjoyed. Of the number of prebends, and their values. But no particulars.

Sess. 36. Crosham, clerk, convented for publishing an erroneous book. He confesseth, and is ready to retract: the archbishop accepteth his submission, and ordereth him 399 to retract, and dismisseth him. The subject of the book not mentioned.

Sess. 22. May 16, 1610. The lower house bringeth to the archbishop some notes of the numbers and values of prebends. [Nothing of particulars mentioned.]

Sess. 40. July 16, 1610. Grant for one subsidy of six shillings in two years. The first payment October 2, 1610. Half yearly.

Sess. 43. Prorogued July 24, to the 17th of October, 1610.

The convocation continued by prorogation. Held by archbishop Bancroft.

Sess. 1. October 31. The archbishop being dead, the dean and chapter of Canterbury give commission to the bishop of London.

Sess. 14. October 7, 1610. The bishop of London prorogueth to Feb. 11, 1610.

Sess. 15. The bishop of London, upon the king's writ, dissolveth the convocation.

A convocation 12^o reg. *Jacobi* began at St. Paul's by archbishop Abbot, anno 3^{io} translationis, the 6th of April, 1614.

Number CCXCVI.

ANNO
1606.

*A proclamation for Jesuits, &c. to depart the realm: upon
a second warning given, after the gunpowder plot.*

WE do not doubt, but that all our subjects embracing the true religion, professed in this church of England, and by law established within this realm, are truly persuaded of our constant resolution for the maintenance and defence of the same; not only because we found it here for so many years settled and blessed of God, in the long peace and prosperity of our people, wherewith it hath been accompanied since the first setting the same free from the Romish servitude, but also chiefly because our own knowledge and understanding (illuminated by the Spirit of God) doth assure us, that the same is agreeable to the divine word, and to the doctrine of the primitive church. Of which our purpose and determination, besides all other our former proceedings (since our entry into this kingdom) we have given a new and certain demonstration by our consent to such two acts as have been passed in this sessions of parliament, both tending to prevent the danger and diminish the number of those who, adhering to the profession of the church of Rome, are blindly led, (together with the superstition of their religion,) both into some points of doctrine, which cannot consist with the loyalty of subjects toward their prince, and oftentimes into direct actions of conspiracies and conjurations against the state wherein they live; as hath most notoriously appeared by the late most horrible and almost incredible conjuration, to blow up us, our children, and all the three estates in parliament assembled. All which notwithstanding, and although by these last treasons abovementioned, contrived and pursued (as they have been) with the privy and warrant of so many of the principal priests of that profession, and grounded upon points of doctrine, (in that church held and maintained,) there is sufficient cause (if there had not been any other enterprise upon the same ground) to justify the proceeding of us and 400

ANNO
1606.

our said parliament in the making and execution of these last, and all other former statutes, tending to the same end.

Nevertheless seeing the sovereign care appertaineth to us, who have the sovereign power of justice in our hand, and the supreme dispensation of clemency and moderation of the severity of our laws is likewise proper to us to use, when we shall find it reasonable; the same deserving to be no less allowed in us, (being in our dominions God's lieutenant,) than it is praised in him, among whose titles it is, that his mercy is above all his works. Although both nature's just offence might be—if we suffered ourselves to be transported with such passion, as so vile and barbarous provocations do excite in human sense. And our providence would be also commended, if we did with all violence endeavour to extirpate out of our realms, not only such as were guilty of the attempt, but all others that gave any cause to be suspected of bearing favour to it, or of whom there is any just occasion to conceive that they may be corrupt with the like poison. Yet as in any provocation, or other respect, extinguished in us so utterly the exercise of that clemency, whereunto nature hath so far inclined us, as we can be withholden from renewing some course of lenity against some particulars so far forth as it may be without the peril of our religious and loyal people, that concur with us in the profession of the gospel.

And therefore, to the end we might not have any further subject ministered unto us, whereby we must be provoked to execute justice upon those, who being called religious persons, and professed devotees of their church, (as priests, Jesuits, seminaries, and such like,) have not only declared themselves to be the stirrers up of our people to disobedience, but when we were pleased formerly, out of our mere grace, to signify our royal pleasure for their departure out of the realm unpunished, have few or none of them taken hold of our gracious favour, have wilfully, and as it were in scorn of the penalty, which our just laws could impose, have still continued in their former practices, and contempt in their

returns, as we do purpose to send away out of our realm ANNO 1606.
even those of that condition, whose lives are in our hands
to take every hour, if we were so disposed, (excepting only
those that are guilty of that horrible treason,) so we have
once again resolved, and for the last warning do denounce
it by these presents, (according to the intent of our laws, and
our former proclamation,) that they shall all of them, that is
to say, Jesuits, seminaries, friars, or any other priests what-
soever, regular or secular, being made by the authority of
the church of Rome, depart out of this realm of England
and Wales, before the first day of August next ensuing,
upon pain to incur the uttermost danger of our laws.

And for their better means to depart according to this
our pleasure, we do hereby signify to them, that if at any
time before the said first of August they, or any of them, ex-
cepting Gerrard or Greenwel, shall resort to any port town
of our realm, and there declare himself to the magistrate of
the said town, or other officers of our port, that he is a priest
of any sort whatsoever, and that he is there to take shipping
for his passage, they shall suffer him or them quietly to de- 401
part, and shall see them shipped and sent away, and give
them their licences for their departure.

And because there may be some priests in hold in divers
ports in our realm, not yet known to us, we do will and
command all sheriffs, bailiffs, and keepers of prisons, within
twenty days after the publishing of this proclamation, to
advertise our privy-council, or some of them, of the names
of all such priests, Jesuits, seminaries, or of any other sort
that are in their custody, and by whom and for what cause
they were committed: to the end that thereupon we may
give order for their transportation.

And now, lest happily this unexpected course of our so
oftentimes reiterated clemency, after such an example, should
either serve to encourage the priests themselves to affront
our justice, or discourage those good and dear subjects of
ours, whose danger and destruction we know shall never
be severed from our own, whensoever such projects shall
be in motion; we do hereto protest, that this is done for

ANNO
1606.

no other purpose, but to avoid the effusion of blood, and by banishing them presently out of our dominions, to remove all cause of such severity, as we shall otherwise be constrained to use toward the other sort of our people, as long as those seducers shall have opportunity to betray their consciences and corrupt their loyalty; towards whom our affections do vary with the object. As we confess, that we desire still to make it appear in the whole course of our government, we are far from accounting all those subjects disloyal that are that way affected; and that we do distinguish of such as be carried only of blind zeal, and such as sin out of presumption, and under pretext of zeal make it their only occupy to persuade disobedience, and to practise the ruin of this church and commonwealth. And therefore, as after-times must give us trial of all men's behaviours, so must all men expect, that their own deserts must be the only measure of their own fortunes at our hands, either one way or other.

Given at our menor of Greenwich, the 10th day of July, in the fourth year of our reign over Great Britain, &c.
1606.

Number CCXCVII.

King James's letter to the lords; desiring their advice, in order to the better improving his revenue.

Anno 1607.

My lords,

THE only disease and consumption, which I can ever apprehend as likeliest to endanger me, is this eating canker of want, which being removed, I could think myself as happie in all other respects as any other king or monarch that ever was since the birth of Christ: in this disease I am the patient, and yee have promised to be the physicians, and to use the best care uppon me, that your witte, faithfulness, and diligence can reach unto. As for my part, you may assure yourselves that I shall facilitate the cure, by all the means possible for a poor patient, both by observing as
402 strait a dyett as ye can in honour and reason prescribe unto

ANNO
1607.

me; as also by using seasonable, and in the right forme, such remedies and antidotes, as ye are to applie to my disease: and as for your part, I know it is the chief, and in a manner the onlie subject whereupon you embarrass your brayns all this tyme of my absence.

And first for your labour of borrowing money..... I onlie wish you better success therein than I dare hope for, till I hear of your conclusion: in the meane tyme I doubt not ye will not onmytt to think of all meanes of addition and increase of rent, as well by some newe and lawful inventions, without the unjust burthen of the people, as also by your frequent sittings uppon your ordynarie commissions of asserts, leases, concealments, and such like. And on the other part that ye will also be thinking uppon the best meanes of substraction and decrease of charges, as well by reformation of corruptions and abuses, as by cutting off redeles superfluities. (The honor, greatnes, and safetie of the king and kingdom being allways respected.)

Some more general matters I also remember you of in addition to those which at my parting I recommended unto you concerning this errand.

First, That none of you, either joyntlie or in particular, shall either recommend to me, or allowe of any such indefinite or vast sute, whereof none of your selves can guess what the vallew may prove, which is the most thankles and ignorant prodigallitie that any prince can use; but whatsoever nature the sute be of, I may first be informed of the true vallew, and then is it my part onlie to consider what out of the measure of my liberalitie I will bestowe uppon the sutor. I meane, either of any new invention found out by a sutor, or of any concealed, unknown debt: (as was the nature of sir Jeames Sandiland's sute, that recusant's unknown debt:) so shall I nede never to repente me of any liberalitie, nor the sutors have cause to thank their own wyttys, but my free favour only.

Secondlie, I would have you to help my memorye, when men come with their sutes, that have already been largely rewarded: for synce there are so many gapers, and so little

ANNO
1607.

to be spared, I must needs answer those that are so diseased with the.....or *caninus appetitus*, as a king of France did long agoe answer one: *Cecy sera pour on aultre.*

Thirdlie, if any sute come for unseasonable renewing of leases, or farms of customes or imposts, I know how greatly that concerns my profit, and that that is almost the same hope that is left for encrease of my rent.

Now having touched three poynts as helps to stave the continual hemorogie of outletting, I will onlie remember you of two restoratives agayne for nourishment, whereof I have oftentimes spoken unto you. The one, that it be no longer forgotten to make my profit as well of the lands of those that are attaynted of treason, as of the fynes of those noble men that were fyned for little better deserts. I mean with that moderation, as I ever intended it, and wherein you are already sufficientlie acquainted with my mynd. The other thing is, that there be some straight and diligent order taken, as well for the through recoverye of my spendable debts, as for the seasonable payment and inbringing as well of my ordinary rents as subsidies. And thus assuring you of as counsellable and pliable a patient as I assure myself you will prove faithfull, dilligent, and I hope fortunate phisicians, I bidd you heartilie farewell; praying God to bless you with a happie success.

JAMES R.

N. B. *This and the following letter were transcribed by sir M. Hicks, some time secretary to the lord treasurer Burghley, from the original letters.*

Number CCXCVIII.

An address to king James from certain of his subjects.

Most gracious soveraigne,

WHEN we that knowe and feelee the strength of our inward affections compare the best of all our external services

ANNO
1607.

with that gracious acceptation, whereof your royall letter hath yielded so cleare and perfect demonstration; we most plainly confess to your majestie, that your goodness shews itself to us in such a shape of royall, or rather divine perfection, as when we have most consulted of an answer, we find ourselves more apt to look one upon another with comfort and admiration, then to resolve of any uniforme direction what shall be our replye, or who shall undertake to put his pen to paper. For as it is true, your majestie should much undervalue our zeale and duties, which are infinite, if you should judge them to be no greater then they do or can appear by our words, though we see how highly it hath pleased you to esteeme them, (the thoughts of men being always of larger dimension then their words or outward shewes can express,) so we think it were both a weakness in us, and derogatorie from your goodnes, if we should rack our wits for words to make your majestie truly understand how unhappy we take ourselves, even in this fulness of our comfort, till we have made your majestie more happy in our faithful and fruitful services in this kingdom, who have vouchsafed to make our meritt so great a part of your happiness, for whom we shall be ready, when we have done all you shall command of men in our places, to lay downe life and fortune for the service and safetie of you and yours, whose days we beseech God to multiply upon the earth, with all your royall olive branches beyond any that ever were a crowne, and to make the first houre of our deviation from this resolution to be the last houre of the lives of

Your majesties most humble and affectionate
subjects and servants.

This letter was written in answer of his majesty's two letters, dated the 25th of Oct. 1607.

ANNO
1612.

Number CCXCIX.

404 *Abbot, lord archbishop of Canterbury, to king James: informing his majesty of secret treasonable practices of Sunega, the Spanish ambassador, anno 1612.*

May it please your most excellent majesty,

I DO not forget what your highness gave me in charge concerning don Pedro de Sunega: whose stay in England may very well give cause of jealousy. When he came from Spain he had in his company Spinola, one Baltazar Sunega, his kinsman, and a third person of quality. All which came through France, and stayed at Paris about fourteen days. About which time they had oft speech with Villeroy. It is given colourably, that Villeroy demanding of them the reason of their negociation, could learn nothing thereof, but such ordinary matter as Sunega represented to your majesty. Spinola and that other are gone to Colein, under pretence to work down the fort which the protestants have raised near to the city. But I am verily persuaded, that the stay of this ambassador here is for no good purpose. I am certainly advertised, and that more ways than one, that he brought over with him thirteen or fourteen thousand pounds in gold, whereof a good parcel is secretly dispersed already. I further understand, that he expecteth a greater sum before his departure.

Besides, I have been informed, that in the night-time many things pass between him and the ledger, of France: which, if it be true, intendeth the more harm, because the French ambassador being tasted that way, both, one, who may well do it, maketh great semblance to the contrary; I will be as useful as I can to understand the truth thereof. Lastly, if I be not deceived, when the powder-treason should have been acted, Sunega was the man who lay here for the king of Spain; and what finger he had in that business, God knows. But I trust, the Almighty, who sitteth in heaven, and laugheth wicked men to

scorn, will turn all the counsels of Achitophel to foolish- ANNO
ness. So beseeching God evermore to bless your majesty, 1612.
with remembrance of my most humble duty, I rest

Your majesty's servant and chaplain, most bound,

Croyden, July 22, 1612.

G. Cant.

A
SUPPLEMENT
OF
RECORDS AND ORIGINAL PAPERS,
TO THE
FORMER VOLUMES OF THE ANNALS.
SERVING TO THE FURTHER IMPROVING AND ILLUSTRATING
OF THE HISTORY.

ANNO
1568.

It began with the ward of Cripplegate: wherein first mentioned John Clayse, girdler; Collyer and Remys; one of them of Artois, the other of Henauld; both silkworkers. In this ward is Anthonie Coran, [Coranus,] preacher in the Italian church, born in Spain, tenant to the duchess of Suffolk; Mary his wife, John and James their children. . . . They go to the Italian church. In this ward there were many silkworkers, besides those before mentioned, to the number of fifteen. Likewise an embroiderer, silk-weaver, two parchment lacemakers, and a fringemaker.

S. Thomas of Acon.

In the foresaid book several Venetians and some Dutch are said to go to church to S. Thomas of Acon, [which is the same with Mercers' chapel.] Gabriel Petroche, Venetian, a chirurgeon, Barbara his wife, and their children. Jerome Venalia, merchant, and a Venetian; Lombard Venalia, and others, go to Thomas of Acons; Matt. de Guester, notary-public, a Dutchman and a demison, and Cornelis his wife, and his children, Paul Typoets, and Cornel. de Hare, his servant, go to S. Thomas of Acon to service. So that here was a religious assembly for preaching and prayers: and some Dutch also resorted hither.

Ministers strangers.

In the parish of S. Edmund's, Anthonie Rodulphs, professor of the gospel in the house of Mr. Sherington. And these did adjoin themselves with him, when he came first to the said house; viz. Vincent Bassens, Frenchman, minister of the gospel; and by that name put in exile by the commandment of the French king. Laur. Bourghinismus, minister of the gospel, of the household of cardinal Castillon: James Machevillens, minister of the gospel, and put in exile; Antonius Lixens, of the same profession: and John Aubries of the church of Bolloyne, exiled with others of the gospel.

Fernando Almarez, Spaniard, a buttonmaker, goeth to the Italian church; John Pharasic and his wife, born in Bruxells; Cornelius Fisher, born in Holland; Tho. Saftfeit, Florentine captain, go to the Italian church.

*Strangers that go to the English church.*ANNO
1568.

A great many of these went to the English, or their parish churches.

Nicolas Taffyn, Guy Bernard, and Pietro de Metre, Frenchmen, students; and be of the French church.

Francis de Farias, Spaniard, and Jocamina his wife, his children, and Nicolas Duprey, his servants, silk-weavers, go to the Italian church. Anthony Brusket, merchant, of Jeane, [Genoa;] he hath three merchants dwelling with him. Baptist Fortune, and Tho. Fortune, Florentines; and they go to the English church.

Benedict Spinola, denison, merchant of Jeane: he goeth to the English church. Three clerks of Jeane, Jasper Voltabis, Ascanius Spinola, and Aug. Grassigne: they go sometimes to the English church, and sometime to the Italian.

Mr. Anthonie, preacher of the city of Jeane; Stephen de Grasse, an old French preacher, and his wife, go to the French church.

Claude Tyton, merchant, and his wife; Mary Petsokin, his daughter, and Mary his servant, all Dutch, in Barkin parish.

S. Olyffe and Alhallows Staining.

3

In this parish were a great many Italians, Dr. Ector and Anno 1607.
his wife, and Prier, her daughter; Nic. de Goles, merchant; Bastion Rice, merchant; Aserbo Delutelo, Alex. Menely, merchants; Epolito Beaumont, Shepion Vilatel, Arasio Vilatel, Aschamo Bramount, servants; all Italians. Anthon. Basan, [Bassani,] Italian, and his wife and five children; all born here: [he was musician to the queen.] James Deroche, preacher, Frenchman, and Mary his wife.

Anthony Coran, [Coranus,] in Cripplegate ward, preacher in the Italian church; born in Spain; tenant to the duchess of Suffolk; Mary his wife; John and James, their children; David de Dieu, and Joan Leveresse, their servants; and they go to the Italian church. [He preached also in Spanish.]

Dr. Caesar, physician, set down under the strangers in-

ANNO
1607.

habiting in the parish of S. Helen's; Mr. Cavecant, Italian, one of the queen's servants, and lived in Katharine Coleman parish; in which parish lived divers Dutch and French merchants; and Mr. Gasperin, a Spaniard, one of the queen's servants.

Eastcheap.

Several of the strangers that were placed here were basketmakers, but denisons, and of the Dutch church.

Ward of Bridge Without: divers joiners, Dutch; some born in Cleveland: a great number of strangers in this ward.

In S. George's, Southwark: Garret Strip, [Stroyt], leather-dresser, denison, born in Brabant; his wife, a child, a maid, and three men-servants; all go to the Dutch church.

Vintrie Ward: Jane Esquier, widow, Katharine, her daughter, Mary and Anne, her cousins; all born in Valentia, shepsters; Lissen Nullent, widow; she is a shepster.

S. Tho. Apostles: Margaret Housenian, widow, and Martha her daughter, born in Flanders, shepster.

Portoken Ward: Peter Loup, musician in Italy, and Katharine, his wife, born in Flanders; they go to the Italian church: Peter Hayes, born in Rone, [Roan]: goes to the French church; and dwelleth with his son the minister of S. Buttolph, [Aldgate.]

Westminster: the French cardinal, living in Hans Hunter's house, hath to the number of forty servants.

Bridge Ward: Ambrose Hewbrick, physician, born in Lowin, [Lovain], Katharine his wife, born in Antwerp, several children; Robert Randulphus, merchant, born in Florence; Robert Meron, merchant, born in Florence; Polito Swant, born in Brisse, [Brissels]; divers more, born in Florence, went to the Spanish ambassador's to hear mass.

S. Magnus.

Some houses mightily pestered with numbers of foreigners; as in one house in S. Magnus parish were twenty-four Dutch people: and herein one was a merchant, with his wife and children; another, a shereman; another, a ta-

pestry-maker; another, a dyer; another, a linen-weaver: the house belonged to Michael Griffen, merchant, a denison, born at Rostar in Flanders; and he lived himself in the same house.

ANNO
1607.

S. Swithin's parish in Walbroke ward: Giles Vanhil, 4 selloth cloth made in Sandwich, called bayes; Peter Apple, denison, and James his brother, born in Flanders, sell cloth, made in Sandwich and Norwich, called bayes: another here was a botcher, and mended apparel; and many more, said to be botchers by trade; another was a musician, servant to the lord marquis Northampton: another, named John Quarry, born in Arras in Flanders, had a licence to make glass in Sussex, went to the French church; another was a worker of here, [hair,] for great hosen; another, a tapestry-worker; another, named John Baloar, born in Bilbow in Spain.

Woolchurch parish: Balthazar Sanchie, denison, born in Spain, hath an English woman to his wife; John Lewis his servant, born in Valentian de Aragon, and is a comfit-maker; they both go to the French church, as they say; hath two tenements; the one he bought, and the other he payeth rent for: here some were menders of old apparel; another, a maker of tennis-balls; another woman was a maker of loops for buttons.

Walbrook parish: several joiners by trade; a painter; a tailor.

Abchurch parish: one dwelling there that sold cloth made in Sandwich and Norwich, called bayes; named John Godskalk, denison.

S. Peter's parish, in Queenhithe ward; John Gillambiskn, Italian, a perfumer, and for most part at the court.

Tower ward, in S. Dunstan's parish in the east: nineteen Dutch in one house; one was Antosin Poumel, merchant, with his wife and children, and servants; John Vouche, John Marni, John Bowthand, and Robert Philip, all ministers, being Frenchmen; Stephen Marvey, minister, and his wife; and divers others that lived by their money, [viz. without trade:] in the same parish, Andrew de Loo, deni-

ANNO
1607.

son, a merchant; Hans Vanderel, his servant; two maid-servants: all Dutch; and go to their own parish church; Emanuel Demetrius, a Dutch merchant, and Hester his wife; Agnes and Sarah, their children; Bastian Speidek, merchant, and Zuzanne his wife, Dutch merchant, and go to their parish church; John de Pesscrowe, Venetian merchant; Sacary Moundy, Jasper Laiet, and another, his servants, and Joseph Lowntney, all Venetians, go to S. Thomas of Acres church; Innocent Conney, Italian, one of the queen's musicians.

S. Alhallows Barkin parish: John Howgabert, denison, hatband-maker; Balthazar Pierse, merchant, his wife and divers children, Portugals, go to no church; some here hat-makers; some buttonmakers; Augustin Lovelone, Venetian, denison, shipwright, wife, children, all born here, go to the parish church; several women, styled needle-women; Peter Miller, a brewer; several beer-brewers here; Claude Tyson, and Mary his wife, merchant; Peterkin, his daughter, and Mary his servant, all Dutch folks in Barkin parish; as also Anthon. Basam, [Bassani,] Italian, and Helyn his wife, and five children, born all here; he is a musician to the queen.

S. Olyff, and Alhallows Staining: divers Italian merchants in these parishes; among the rest Acerbo Velatelo; Gillan de Vache, Frenchman, musician; another Frenchman, named Laryel, musician; James de Raché, preacher, and Mary his wife; ——— embroiderer; ——— book-binder; John Veric, broker, Dutchman; several lay at his house; among the rest, Michael Fever, minister, Mr. Dr. Roman, and John Lowen his servant, in the house of Edw. Touche; James Cornel, a cutter of pearls, a Frenchman; Adrian Redlegg, Dutchman, minister, and his wife, a denison.

Coleman-street ward: Godfrey Wincour, [seems to be Wynges,] a Dutch preacher; Christian, his wife; Jeronimo, the Italian preacher, and Loweraie, his wife, with her maiden, and a boy, all go to the Italian church.

Liberties of Christ's Church within Algate: there lived

in one house forty-four persons, being all Dutch: and John Van Leur, merchant, payeth the rent for the same, to sir Lewis Mordaunt, knt.: in this liberty lived the widow of Utenhove, [Dutch minister,] with three children, boarders with her, and divers others, to the number of fourteen; they are tenants to the duke's grace, [duke of Norfolk.] [This was Dukes-place, I suppose.]

ANNO
1607.

Black Friars: Mr. Cossyn, Frenchman, minister, and Breugen his wife, come for religion, with three boys, with two wenches, which go to school, and are of the French church; Tho. Vantrolly, Frenchman, denison and stationer, with his wife and one child, born in England; they are of the French church: and there live in the same house two Frenchmen, that came for religion, and be of the French church; Angel Victorys, Sardinian, denison, school-master, and his wife, came for religion, and are of the French church; John Victorys, Sardinian, came for religion; he is said to be Dutch, and of no church: many here in Black Friars are said to come for religion.

S. Botulph without Bishopsgate: many houses pestered with numbers of strangers: here were skinnners, silk-weavers, sackcloth-weavers.

Minorities: Philip Garse, minister, Dutchman; Bartholomew Williamson, preacher of the Dutch church, and Elizabeth his wife, born in England; Cornel. Jacob, a minister of the Dutch church, born in Holland.

The number of strangers in Cripplegate ward 277.
Whereof

Dutchmen	-	-	213		Spaniards	-	-	-	6
French	-	-	41		Denisons	-	-	-	12

The number of strangers in Lime-street ward 31.

In Cornhill ward 28.

In Dowgate ward 166.

In Farringdon ward without 176. Within 81.

In S. Martins le Grand 269.

Among these, Peter Banks and Ursin, ministers of the French church; and Olyver Rowland and Bustein, mini-

ANNO 1607. sters of the French church; and Nove Banet, Frenchman, minister.

In the liberty of S. Katharine's 425.				Whereof	
Dutch	-	-	-	328	Danes - - - - 8
French	-	-	-	69	Scots - - - - 12
Spaniards	-	-	-	2	Poles - - - - 5
Italian	-	-	-	1	

6 The whole number of strangers, as well denisons as not denisons, dwelling and remaining within the exempt jurisdiction and liberties adjoining to the city, together with the city of Westminster, 2598. Whereof

Dutch	-	-	-	1937	Danes - - - - 9
French	-	-	-	552	Polonians - - - - 5
Scots	-	-	-	41	German - - - - 1
Spaniards	-	-	-	24	Barbarian - - - - 1
Italians	-	-	-	28	

Whereof of the English church	835
Of the Dutch church	- - 510
Of which number the denisons were	415
Of the French church	- - 81
Of the Italian church	- - 29
Of no church	- - - 423

The whole number of strangers, as well within the city of London, as within the exempt liberties, and places aforesaid, near adjoining to the same, was 6704. Whereof

Dutch persons	5225	Portugueze	- - 22
French	- - 1119	Danes	- - - 10
Venetians and Ita-		Florentines	- - 19
lians	- - 83	Janwayes	- - 8
Spaniards	- - 95	Neapolitans	- - 2
Germans	- 22	Scots	- - - 88
Polonians	- 10		

Whereof of the English church	1815
Of the Dutch church	- - 1910
Of the French church	- - 1810
Of the Italian church	- - 161
Of no church	- - - 1003

Of which number of strangers, } 880
 there are denisons - }

ANNO
 1607.

The numbers of houses pestered within the said city and liberties is 37. The number aforesaid is besides the Spaniards in Bridewell, and all others that are in any other prisons.

Number II.

7

A proclamation against retainers.

THE queen's majesty understanding as well by her own Anno 1571.
 careful observation of her policy, as by report of such as have the administration of justice in her realm, how universally the unleeftul the retaining of multitudes of unordinary servants by liveries, badges, and other ensigns and tokens, contrary to the good and ancient statutes and laws of this realm, doth manifestly withdraw from her majesty's crown the due services of her officers, tenants, and subjects, and doth plainly hinder justice, and disorder the good policy of the realm by maintenance of unleeftul suits and titles, and by stirring up and nourishing of factions, riots, and unleeftul assemblies, the mothers of rebellion; besides such other great inconveniences, that already are seen, and more likely daily to follow, if speedy remedy be not provided for this purpose:

Evil of retaining.

Is moved with a most earnest intention to procure a most speedy remedy thereof: and because her majesty in present is rather to have generally her laws duely observed, and the debates quietly reformed, than the great forfeitures to be levied, which are due to her majesty, and might greatly by justice enrich her treasure, especially by the execution of the said laws, as well by the persons that have and do unleeftully retain others, as also by them that are unleeftully retained against the laws: therefore her majesty, of her special grace, doth by this her proclamation notify to all persons, of what state or degree soever the same be, who shall, after the 20th day of February next following, unleeftully retain, or be retained, in any service by livery, badge,

A day appointed to redress.

ANNO
1571.

or other token, contrary to the statutes and laws of this realm therefore provided, the same shall not have a manner of favour or grace of her majesty for any such offence committed against the said laws, before nor after the said 20th of February. And contrariwise, whosoever shall upon this admonition forbear to offend herein from and after the said 20th of February next, shall not be in any wise impeached at her majesty's suit, nor shall forfeit any thing to her majesty for the same. And so her majesty's pleasure is, that all her justices and officers before whom any such suit is or shall be commenced for any offence committed or to be committed before the said 20th of February, to have regard to these her majesty's gracious dispensations.

Inquisition. And for the better execution of the laws and statutes remaining in force against such unleeftul retainers, her majesty chargeth all manner of her justices and officers, to whom the execution of the same is prescribed, to cause inquisition, or examination, according to the said laws, to be made in all places of the realm immediately, or as soon as conveniently they may, after the said 20th day of February. And that all justices of assize, and gaol-deliveries, as well in towns corporate and franchises, as in any counties, shall at their next sessions have due regard, by good examination and trial, that no person be empanelled in any jury before them that is unleeftully retained without due reformation, and punishment of the same, for the better example thereof in their open sessions.

Sessions. And further, they shall cause a sufficient new jury to be charged at the same sessions diligently to that only purpose, to inquire of the points and articles of all the statutes being in force; and especially of the statute made in the third year of her majesty's noble grandfather, king Henry the Seventh, against unleeftul retainers; and give also some order, that (as the truth may be therein understande) some good evidence may be given to the said jury in that behalf. And that also other things by the care of the said justices may be done, both at their next sessions, and at all other their sessions following; whereby the inconveniences above

mentioned may be the more speedily reformed, and the laws in this behalf hereafter better kept, &c. ANNO
1571.

She willed, that her justices of assize, after their next sessions, at some convenient time, make report to her of their doings, and of their opinions, for the better [redressing] hereof, as cause shall require: and

Further, she charged all manner of persons unlawfully retained by liveries, badges, or by any other compact, who shall require to be discharged for any offence punished before the said 20th of February, that they shall before the said 20th day discharge their said servants, so unlawfully retained, of their services, in respect of the danger of the law, and thereupon the servants shall accept the same discharge, and shall cease to wear the badges or other tokens whereby they were accustomed to be retained: upon pain, that if the said servants shall continue to be retained unlawfullythey shall not in any wise be forborne from punishment for their default, committed against the law, before the said 20th day, &c. Servants
retained.

Given at her palace of Westminster, the 3d day of January 1571, in the 14th year of her reign.

Number III.

Minutes of a letter from the privy-council to the queen's officers at Chester, to stop all ships immediately, May 1571, upon apprehension of some treacherous or seditious persons passing that way.

AFTER our commendations; you shall immediately upon the receipt hereof give strait order, and see to it yourselves, that if any ship or craier shall come into your haven, although it be in pretence of merchandise, ye shall take the sails and tackling thereof into your custody, and not suffer it to depart, having aboard any other person than merchant or person known to you, and for whom ye will answer at your peril. And the same charge ye shall give to all ships and vessels which be with you already in the haven or creek of your jurisdiction; lest peradventure

ANNO
1571.

some treacherous or seditious persons should, as it is thought, to the danger of the queen's majesty, and trouble of the realm, by any colour pass by you.

Wherefore fail you not, as true subjects, to have an eye to the same, as ye will answer, not unwarned. Fare ye well.
From Westminster, the 17th of May, 1571.

Your loving friends,

N. Bacon,	R. Leycester,	F. Bedford,
E. Clynton,	W. Burghley,	F. Knowley,
		- T. Smyth.

Postscript. This order ye must carefully observe, till you be otherwise directed by us.

To our loving friends the mayor of West-Chester, the customer and comptroller there, and to every of them.

The reason of the former letter was the apprehension of some imminent danger to the queen and kingdom, from advertisements of money privately conveyed from Scotland by the pope and Spain to the Scots queen. See Annals, vol. ii. chap. v. ann. 1571:

Number IV.

Upon the massacre at Paris, protestants fly into England: whereof a brief account was sent up, of those that fled to Rye from Roan and Diep.

Anno 1572. SOON after that massacre, came over from Roan and Diep to Rye 641 persons, men, women, and children: families 85. They came over at several times in the months of August and September, and some few in October: but some few came over in August, somewhat before the massacre. [Perhaps having some inkling or intelligence of it.]

Besides, in the beginning of November, the 4th, 7th, and 9th days, 58 persons more: most of them for religion: several, monsieur de Vidam's of Chartres servants.

The view was taken of these French and other strangers, within this town of Rye, by the appointment of Henry Seymer, mayor of the same town, and the jurats there.

And John Donning, custos of Rye, sent up the catalogue, Nov. the 22d, to the lord treasurer, according to order sent to him. ANNO
1572.

In this catalogue are the names of divers, entitled ministers, clerks, schoolmasters, many merchants, mariners, and of all trades, and some gentlemen; with their children, wives, and servants.

Number V.

10

The chaplains and fellows of the Savoy to the lord Burghley, lord treasurer, to help them in the miserable condition of their hospital; and that Mr. James of Oxford might be appointed by the queen to be their master. 1573.

WE, the poor chaplains and fellows of the queen's majesty's hospital of the Savoy, do humbly pray your honour to help us in this our so great need. We will not recite the miserable state of this our poor, decayed, and indebted house, which is happened unto us by the misgovernment and disorder by the late deprived master Thurland, for that we think ye are not ignorant thereof: sithence which deprivation, for want of a master, divers of our tenants withhold from us, and deny to pay our rents; they make waste and spoil our woods, and do commit other forfeitures; so that thereby we shall shortly want wherewith to provide sustenance, either for the poor or for ourselves, or any not able to redress any wrongs that do oppress us.

May it therefore please your good lordship, there is one Mr. James, B. D. and reader of the divinity lecture in Oxon: his living, learning, and zeal in religion is so well known, that the same needs not our commendation. His wisdom and policy in restoring and bringing to happy quietness the late wasted, spoiled, and indebted University college in Oxon, whereof he is now master, doth not only give us hopes of great good that he shall be able to do us, but also do make us the more bold humbly to pray your honour to be the means, that her majesty may be moved for the said

ANNO
1573.

Mr. James that he may be our master. The which if it shall please her highness to grant, we, with the poor of this house, shall be most happy; and will not forget, as our most bounden duty is, to pray for her long and prosperous reign, and for the continuance and preservation of your honour, with increase of the same.

Your honour's most humble orators,

Your poor chaplains and fellows of the Savoy,

William Neale,

John Hodgeson,

John Parke,

Tho. Chambers.

11

Number VI.

To which address of the fellows may be added a more particular relation of the state of the Savoy, as represented Nov. 29, 1575, bearing this title: A brief declaration of the state of the hospital of the Savoy, as it was found by her majesty's visitors, anno Dom. 1570.

Anno 1575.

WHEREAS upon complaint made to the queen's majesty of the manifold disorders, spoils, and dilapidations of the said hospital, committed briefly by Thomas Thurland, late master there, he was, by her highness's visitors thereunto appointed, upon due proof, found culpable, and deprived from his office of master there, the said visitors, before his deprivation, caused an inventory to be taken of all his moveable goods remaining at that time in the said hospital, as well of that which appertained to his household, as of the beds and furniture there appertaining to the [poor] that are daily lodged there: and the same forthwith, upon the said master's deprivation, was committed to William Nele and John Hodgeson, two of the perpetual chaplains there during the vacation of the said mastership, and have had the governance of the said house, and the receipt of lands thereof, ever sithence, until the said Thurland was, by the queen's majesty's clemency, restored to the said office again.

Which said Nele and Hodgeson, being now dead, did

yearly, during their lives, make account of their office to the auditor of the said house: by whose books the states of the same are to be understood and known. ANNO
1575.

And as touching the state of the lands and revenues of the said house at that time of the deprivation of the said Thurland, presented and found before the said visitors, that the said Tho. Thurland, the space of eleven years together, continued master, and received the whole revenues of the said house, and kept the statutes of the same from the perpetual chaplains, and gat into his hands the common seal, and kept it to his own private use, contrary to the statutes; and therewithal, of his own private authority, made and granted divers unprofitable leases of the lands of the said hospital for excessive number of years, as for 30, 40, 50, 60, 80, and above, the certainty whereof cannot yet be known: and namely, made one lease to Mr. Fanshaw of the manor of Denzey, for 600 years; another to one Mr. Anderton, of lands in Yorkshire and Lancashire, for 1000 years: and now of late it is declared, that the said Anderton had no lease, but a plain sale thereof. Mr. Fanshaw.
Mr. Anderton.

Also, that the said Thurland, being fallen into great debts for his own private affairs, bound the said hospital under the common seal aforesaid for payment of his own private debts, and with the revenues of the said house paid 12 them; and did suffer certain extents to be served forth upon the said lands for his own debts.

So that by one way and other the said hospital is charged for his private debts, as by the auditor's book appeareth, which he shewed to the visitors, to the sum of *1^{li}. ix^s. xxxviii^d. xviii^s. viii^d.*

Item, He sold away of his own head the fee-simple of a house and land at Mile-end, of the yearly value of *v^{li}.*; converting the money thereof to his own private use. 1938^{li}. 16^s.
8^d.

Also, he bound the hospital, by their common seal, to pay *lx^{li}.* for advowson of the benefice of Denbigh; and hath sold the same again to his own use. 100^{li}.

Also, he sold away the jewels, copes, vestments, and other ornaments of the said hospital: also a chalice with a

ANNO
1575.

cover, double gilt: also very fair plates, given to the said house by Mr. Feckenham, then dean of Paul's; for which the hospital is bound yearly to pay xls. to the petty canons of Powles for evermore.

The visitors.

Edmund bishop of London; Gabriel Goodman, dean of Westminster; Tho. HUYCKE, LL.D.; Will. Constantine, LL.D., surrogate, deputed by Tho. Watts, S.T.D., archdeacon of Middlesex: together with Matthew archbishop of Canterbury; sir Will. Cecill, principal secretary; sir Ralph Sadleir, chancellor of the duchy of Lancaster; and divers others.

By these he was solemnly deprived, for the devastation and dilapidation, and great wrong done to the hospital, in a formal writing, dated the 29th of July, 1570.

Number VII.

But by Thurland's petition to the queen, and her clemency, he was (as it seems) admitted again to be master of the Savoy, ann. 1574, subscribing to certain rules and orders for the governing of the said hospital: together with his oath for performance.

I, THOMAS THURLAND, do faithfully promise, that I shall, to the utmost of my power, hereafter, at all times, well and truly observe and perform all and singular the rules and orders before written, and by me subscribed, and the contents of every of them; and shall continually from henceforth demean and conform myself according to the same.

Th. Thurland.

And further, I do here, taking a corporal oath upon the holy evangelists, swear by the contents of the same, that if I shall hereafter at any time, contrary to my said profession, offend in not observing and performing the said rules

and orders, and any the contents of every of them, according to the true meaning, I shall account myself no master of that hospital of the Savoy; neither shall receive or take any profit or commodity thereof; neither make any claim or demand to any thing by any right, title, or colour thereof; but shall alway after, from time to time, yield myself to be deprived, destituted, and by all ways and means to be verily for ever removed from the said mastership, and all the rights and pertinences thereof, and my claim, title, and interest thereto, by any that shall be authorized, deputed, or appointed to proceed therein: and that no appeal or contradiction touching any proceeding therein to be had shall be by me had, or used, to impeach, let, or by any means to delay the same, or any execution thereof to be made.

ANNO
1575.

Number VIII.

Dr. Whitgift, master of Trinity college in Cambridge, and the senior fellows, to the lord Burghley; in behalf of one of their society: he and the lord Bacon being their only patrons.

Honoratiss. dno. dno. Gulielmo Cecillio dno. Burghleio, summo totius Angliæ thesaurario, et almæ universitatis Cantabrig. cancellario dignissimo: anno 1573.

QUANTAM et quam certam spem bonitatis et clementiæ tuæ erga nos semper concepimus, (honoratissime domine,) speramus quidem longa ulla attestazione aut argumentis pluribus quibus id tibi conemur ostendere, etiamnum non egere. Quoniam in omnibus causis et sæpius emersuris de jure controversiis nostris tanquam patrono atque advocato singulari nostro uteremur præter te et honoratissimum tibi que amicissimum dom. Nicolaum Baconem elegimus fere neminem. Qua de re veremur certe ne nimis cum benevolentie isti tuæ singulari erga nos, tum clementiæ erga omnes interdum importuni fuerimus. Non enim unquam veriti, ne arbitrere nos aut acceptorum beneficiorum multitudine

ANNO
1573.

placatos, aut saltem satiatos magnitudine aliquando esse oportere. Effecit enim toties illa in maximis gravissimisque negotiis nostris testata animi tui voluntas, ut non modo de nobis in posterum valde solliciti, sed etiam pro aliis interdum amplitudinem tuam audeamus interpellare.

Quamquam revera (honoratissime domine) alicum recte illum non dixerimus, atque nunc intercedimus, sed unum e nobis, cui si in ea petitione quam habet ad dominationem tuam quicquam poterimus prodesse, libentissime sane hanc operam nostram ei impendimus. Quæ sit aut ratio petitione ejus (speramus sane fere æquissimam) tute ex ipso melius cognosces. Ille vero in eadem si nostra gratia senserit se quicquam profecisse, nos quidem non modo illi congratulamur (utpote quem indignum vel majori hoc nostro officio non judicamus) sed et tuo etiam honori deinceps, cum tantas gratias agemus, tum tali ac tanta præterea observantia nostræ memoria prosequemur, ut facillime intelligas, cum hunc unum contubernalem nostrum hoc uno beneficio affeceris, te apud nos omnes alumnos tuos, gratissimos sane homines, maximum beneficium reposuisse. Deus Optimus Maximus Amplitudinem tuam in diuturna felicitate nobis reique publicæ incolumem tueatur.

Honori, virtutique tuæ deditissimi,

Johannes Whitgift.

Nicolaus Browne,

Osmundus David,

Joannes Cooke,

Jacobus Bill,

Lucas Gilpin,

Guilielmus Redman,

Guilielmus Farrand,

Johannes Handson.

Cantabrigiæ, tertio calendas
Julii, 1573.

Number IX.

Dr. Gabriel Goodman, dean of Westminster, to the lord treasurer, ann. 1577. for Westminster college; there being then thoughts of reforming some things therein.

Sir,

Anno 1577. MY duty most humbly remembered; I am bold to send

ANNO
1577.

unto your honour a brief declaration of the orders used in the college by Dr. Bill and me, since the last election. May it please you to confer the same with the statutes, to consider thereof, as you shall think good. I pray God that may be done which may be to God's glory, the queen's honour, and the good example of the church. I could wish a convenient residence of both dean and prebendaries: first, that every one might sometimes preach in their persons; 2. that one may be present in the church to pray, as our most bounden duty is, for her majesty, being our founder; 3. for the better order and government of the church. Unless there be daily commodity for residence, as it is at Windsor, or such like place, I fear me, which I am sorry to speak, the residence will not be so well kept.

I beseech your honour that there may be that moderation used which shall be most convenient for all in respect. Hitherto I and the company, I thank God, have agreed very brotherly, with great quietness, as any such company, I hope. I would be sorry, if by seeking to better things, dissension should grow to unquietness. My special trust is in God, that as he hath provided her majesty with motherly care for the church, and your honour with godly zeal to virtue and learning, so he will work some good effect of this travail. Thus, with my continual prayer for you and all 15 yours, I humbly take my leave.....From Westminster college, this 14th of November, 1577.

Your honour's most bound,
Gabriel Goodman.

See another account of the state of this college and the prebendaries in the year 1586, given by Dr. Goodman, the dean, in the Annals, vol. iii. Appendix to the second book, num. 10. p. 149.

ANNO
1580.

Number X.

*Mr. Robert Bertie to the lord Burghley, lord treasurer,
1580: concerning his son Peregrine's title of lord Willoughby, and right thereto by his mother, the duchess of Suffolk.*

Pleaseth it your lordship,

FOR that yesternight, in return from your lordship, I found Mr. Clarencieux unable to maintain his assertion of grace, fearing the same may have more credit with you than he deserveth, I am bold to impart to your lordship two of many reasons, why I rendered to him again his opinion. The first is, that I am able to prove by many examples, but namely, in this house, that Rich. Wells, immediately upon the death of the lord Robert Wells, used the style of lord Willoughby in the right of his wife, as a thing lawful, without scruple, or other mediation. Also it cannot be denied, in the question between Reginald lord Grey of Ruthen, and Edward Hastings, for the style and arms of lord Hastings, but that the judgment given with the lord Grey, claiming from the woman, sufficed, without any other special grace: for what is done by law is intended done by the prince's will and commandment.

William, Conqueror, used none other creation than by donation of *baroness*, and to *dame*, not only temporal but ecclesiastical persons, (otherwise incapable,) without any other ceremony, transmitted the dignity to their heirs and successors (which the abbots held in the right of their abbeyes) as tenant by courtesy in right of his wife. Neither is there any use of petition in such cases in Flanders, Brabant, Spain, or France, whose apes we are in customs of chivalry; having besides a more special privilege by the courtesy of England. But this much is to be confessed, that in Mr. Wymbishe's case, examined before king Henry VIII., bishop Gardiner, and the two chief justices present, and Garter that then was, affirming, that by ancient custom every husband must use the style of his wife's dignity of inheritance, it was then concluded, that from thenceforth none

should so do without special grace, unless he have issue by his wife; in which case the law yieldeth him a special grace to enjoy the barony for term of his life, and the dignity, as incident to the same. There is no good subject that gladly would enjoy any thing contrary to the good grace of the 16 prince: livery seems a kind of grace, yet such as by law the prince is to yield to the subject.

ANNO
1590.

For my part, I value nothing comparable to her majesty's favour: and so I end; most humbly beseeching your lordship to pardon my earnestness in defence of my son's inheritance.

Your lordship's humbly at command,
R. Bertie.

Number XI.

To which letter may be added one to the same lord from Peregrine Bertie, son and heir of the abovesaid Robert; claiming the title of lord Willoughby, March 1575. a man well known in the queen's reign for his courage, and valour, and wit. Writ March —. 1575. Who was now going into Lincolnshire, to his estate there.

My lord,

..... I WOULD more gladly have come myself to have done this my duty to your lordship, than to send my letters, being bound so many ways to honour you^a, but that the earl of Kent and his servants offer so many occasions of quarrel, with their contumelious speeches and behaviours, as with much pain I refrain my servants from seeking revenge. Of the earl's choler, uttered to myself and the duchess [of Suffolk, his mother,] at our last meeting, I suppose report is made to your lordship by my lord chief justice. I contained, to wear out my lord's malice with patience; but if that we fail in, I must prepare a rough wedge for a rough knot: for I cannot perceive, (beside your lordship and another,) that many others have regard to small fire-sparks, until they grow out into dangerous flames. The

^a He was bred up under this lord, who was master of the wards and liveries.

ANNO 1580. Almighty God be your director and protector.....The
3d of March, 1575.

Your lordship's assured and humble at command,
P. Bertie.

17

Number XII.

A letter of sir Walter Raleigh to the lord treasurer, ann. 1583. concerning the earl of Oxford, under a cloud at court; for whom he had spoken favourably to the queen; being desired so to do by the said lord, whose beloved daughter Anne that earl had married. Occasioned by some quarrel between the earl and some other noblemen.

Anno 1583. THE evening after the receipt of your lordship's letter, I spake with her majesty; and ministering some occasion touching the earl of Oxford, I told her majesty how grievously your lordship received her late discomfutable answer. Her majesty, as your lordship had written, (I know not, lately and strangely persuaded,) purposed to have no repetition between the lord Howard, Arundel, and others, and the earl; and said, it was a matter not so slightly to be passed over. I answered, that being assured her majesty would never permit any thing to be prosecuted to the earl's danger, if any such possibly; and therefore it were to small purpose, after so long absence and so many disgraces, to call his honour and name again in question: whereby he might appear the less fit either for her favour or presence. In conclusion, her majesty confessed, that she meant it only thereby to give the earl warning; and that, as it seemed to me, being acquainted with his offences, her grace might seem the more in remitting the revenge or punishment of the same.

I delivered her your lordship's letter: and what I said further, how honourable and profitable it were for her majesty to have regard of your lordship's health and quiet, I refer to the witness of God, and good report of her high-

ness: and the more to witness how desirous I am of your ANNO
 lordship's favour and good opinion, I am content for your 1583.
 sake to lay the serpent before the fire, as much as in me
 lieth, that, having recovered strength, myself may be most
 in danger of his poison and sting. For answer, her majesty
 would give me no other, but that she would satisfy your
 lordship; of whom she ever had, and would ever have spe-
 cial regard. Thus being unfeignedly willing to deserve your
 lordship's good favour, I humbly take my leave. Green-
 wich, this present Friday, May 12, 1583.

Your lordship's most willing to be commanded,

W. Rauley.

Number XIII.

18

*Francis Bacon, son to sir Nicolas Bacon, lord keeper, his
 letter, written in the year 1580, to the lord treasurer
 Burghley, who had recommended him to the queen's fa-
 vour for some place under her; and her majesty's gra-
 cious answer in that behalf.*

*This F. B. was sir Francis Bacon, after lord Verulam,
 viscount St. Albans, and lord chancellor of England.*

My singular good lord,

YOUR lordship's comfortable relation of her majesties Anno 1580.
 gracious opinion and meaning towards me, though at that
 tyme your leisure gave me not leave to shewe howe I was
 affected therewith, yet uppon everie representation thereof
 it entreth and striketh so much more deeplie into me, as
 both my nature and dutie presseth me to return some
 speache of thankfulness. It must be an exceeding comfort
 and encoradgment unto me, setting fourth and putting my
 self in waye towards her majesties service, to encounter with
 an example so private and domestical of her majesties gra-
 cious goodness and benignitie being made good, and vere-
 fied in my father so far fourth as it extendeth unto his
 posteritie, accepting them as amended by his service during
 the nonage, as I may term it, of their own desartes. I, for

ANNO
1580.

my part, am well content that I take least part either of his abilities of mind, or of his worldlie advancement, both which he held and received, the one of the gift of God immediate, the other of her majesties gifte. In the loyall and earnest affection which he bare to her majesties service, I trust my portion shall not be with the least, nor in proportion to my youngest birth: for methinks his presidency should be a silent charge upon his blessing unto us all in our degrees to follow him afarr off, and to dedicate unto her majesties service both the use and spending of our lyves. True it is, that I must nedes acknowledg myself prepared and furnished thereunto with nothing but a multitude of lackes and imperfections. But calling to mind how diverslie, and in what particular providence God hath declared himself to tender the estate of her majesties affairs, I conceive and gather hope, that those whom he hath in a manner prest for her majesties service, by working and imprinting in them a single and zealous mynde to bestowe their daies therein, he will see them accordinglie appointed of sufficiencie convenient for the rank and standing where they shall be employed; so as, under this her majesties blessing, I trust to receive a longer allowance of God's graces. As I may hope for that, so I can assure and promise for my endeavour, that it shall not be in fault, but what diligence can intitle me unto, that I doubt not to recover. And now seeing it hath pleased her majestie to take knowledge of this my mynde, and to vouchsafe to appropriate me unto her service, preventing any desert of myne with her princelie liberalitie; first, I am humbly to beseech your lordships to present to her majestie my more than most humble thanks therefore, and withall having regard to myne owne unworthiness to receive such favour, and in the small possibility in me to satisfie and answer what her majestie conceiveth, I am moved to become a most humble suitor unto her majestie, that this benefit also may be affixed to the other, which is, that if there appear not in me suche forwardnes of service, as it may be her majestie doth beninglie value me and asseesse me at, by reason of my sundrie

wantes, and the disadvantage of my nature, being unapt to laye fourth the simple store of these inferior giftes, which God hath allotted unto me, most to view, yet that it would please her excellent majestie not to accomt my thankfulness lesse, for that my disabilitie is great to shew it, but to susteyne me in her majesties gracious opinion, wheruppon I onlie rest, and not uppon expectation of anie desart to procede from myself towards the entertainment therof. But if it shall please God to send fourth an occasion wherbie my thankful affection may be tried, I trust I shall save no labor for ever making more protestation of it after. In the mean tyme, howsoever it be not made known to her majestie, yet God knoweth it through the daily solicitations wherwith I address myself unto him in unfained prayer for the multiplying of her majesties prosperities. To your lordship, whose recommendation I know right well hath been material to advaunce her majesties good opynion of me, I can be but a bounden servant. So much can I safely promise and purpose to be, seing publick and private bands varie not, but that my service to God, her majestie, and your lordship drawe in a lyne. I wishe therefore to shew it with as good prooffe as I said it with good faith. From G. this 18th of Oct. 1580.

ANNO
1580.

Your most dutiful and bounden nephew,
Fran. Bacon.

Number XIV.

The bishop of Ross's letter to Mary queen of Scots, abbreviated in the Annals, vol. iii. thus went on at large, being the continuation of it. Anno 1583.

"WHEREFORE, although I do not see why we should
"hope, if we weigh all things in a human balance, yet when
"I turn my mind and thought to God, I am induced to
"think there is no cause why we should entertain despair
"of very great good notwithstanding to befall the state,
"who cheerfully bear all things for God's sake and yours;

ANNO
1583.

“ or that you, most serene queen, should sink under the
 “ greatest evils: for the same God that had delivered David
 “ from the most grievous vexations of Saul, and Manasse,
 “ almost destroyed with the filthiness of a prison, and the
 “ apostle St. Paul, exposed to the most raging fury of Nero,
 “ like a lion, can restore you also to the state, and the state
 “ to you, and the church, and great liberty in the church,
 “ and the greatest pleasure in the greatest liberty. For why
 “ should you be discouraged, and broken in your mind?
 “ Did not the same God restore to liberty Malcolme, Ro-
 “ bert, and David Bruce, your great-grandfather James,
 “ [*tritavum tuum*,] and others your ancestors, kept in stran-
 “ prison in England, and bestowed on them more ample
 “ honours than they had before?

- 20 “ Go on therefore courageously, most pious queen, and
 “ hope for better things, more peaceable, more ample, by
 “ their examples.....Almighty God, being so often en-
 “ treated by the prayers of many in the humility of their
 “ hearts, will snatch you out of these dangers, and adorn you
 “ with far greatest honours; will set before you a most
 “ ample reward of these your labours and cares; will in-
 “ crease the sweetness of your liberty; will enlarge the
 “ borders of your kingdom; and, lastly, will never leave off
 “ to be a father to you, if you will continue to be a daugh-
 “ ter to him.....”

Then he exhorted her to perseverance. “ Therefore se-
 “ riously and constantly ever do that which with the great-
 “ est praise you now do; as I have very often conferred
 “ with you, both absent by letter, and present by word of
 “ mouth. To which purpose, when I thought the reading
 “ of history would be of great moment, I sent to you the
 “ history of the affairs of former kings, which none before
 “ had touched, writ in English, when I was sent ambassador
 “ to England. But when the calamities of our time had ex-
 “ cluded me from the public offices of the state, I was un-
 “ willing in this my leisure to lie idle, and no profit from
 “ my labour might seem to flow to our commonweal:
 “ wherefore, lest this my leisure should be thought to pe-

"rish without any profit to the state, I have not only put
 "into Latin what I hastily wrote in English, but have
 "more straitly digested, for the benefit of our people,
 "the whole history of the age past into one volume: which
 "on that account I now send to you; that thence you may
 "select examples, whereby you may more and more inflame
 "yourself to the studies of piety and religion; and the vir-
 "tues, wherein you much flourish, you may admire in
 "others your ancestors, and love in yourself: that profit
 "also may flow from this our labour, that he, your son, a
 "prince of the best hope and parts, (which we humbly, in
 "our daily prayers, beg of God may be safe to our state,
 "and salutary to the church of Christ,) may draw hence
 "most remarkable examples of vices for him to shun, and
 "of virtues for him to follow." He exhorted her, "that
 "since she could not do the office of a parent to him, not be-
 "ing present with him, she should procure diligently that
 "he would walk according to the steps of his parents in his
 "studies of religion and virtue; and stir him by letters and
 "writing, if he were slack; and if he ran, to excite him
 "more and more."

ANNO
1582.

Number XV.

*A letter of Edwin Sandys, archbishop of York, May 22, Anno 1586.
 1586, to the lord treasurer, lord Burghley: justifying
 himself against certain accusations made against him,
 and complained of to the queen by the dean of York, for
 leasing out the church lands by reversion; which had
 brought him up to court to vindicate himself.*

MY honourable good lord. The dean spitteth out his
 venom still, and hath used means to infect the very court.
 There is no end of his malice. He hath by his patron
 made her majesty to be informed, that before the lords 21
 were appointed to hear our cause, there was no more mat-
 ter but my yea and his nay; neither had he said any
 thing in the consistory which was not convenient and al-

ANNO
1586.

lowable, neither could any thing be proved against him. How true this is, your lordship and others appointed for that cause can well tell: to whose report in that behalf I refer me.

Further, her majesty is informed, that I have given divers leases unto my children in reversion, and no fine reserved thereof unto the use of the church. This as impudent. For I hold no land of the church; neither ever had the church any thing of the bishopric of York for the use thereof. In truth, they have the church lands, and should keep a stop in their common chest for the defence thereof: but the overplus of the revenue they put not in that treasury chest for the church, but, like good fellows, divide it among themselves; and that is the cause of their protestation, that I may not see into their reckonings in my visitations. There was, not many years since, 200*l.* in their chest, for the use of their church: but my lord president's men brake in, and robbed St. Peter of every penny; and yet they escaped punishment, although it was burglary. But to avoid the like, they put it in their private purses, and buy land with it for themselves, which can hardly be robbed from them.

I grant that I gave (as I lawfully might) to my six sons, every one two leases in reversion: for the confirmation whereof, the dean and chapter had of me for every lease 4*l.*; in the whole 48*l.* I am bound in conscience to take care of my family. I have no land to leave them, as the dean hath a great deal: and as fit for me to bestow these upon my children, who, I trust, shall not be found unworthy of such help, as upon my servants, or strangers. The bishopric loseth nothing by it; neither is it a whit in worse case. This complaint smelleth of mere malice towards me and mine. The dean will not remember, how that my predecessor, within two months that he was translated to Canterbury, gave unto his kinsmen and servants, and for round sums of money to himself, six score leases and patents; and even then when they were thought not to be good in law: and the dean and chapter confirmed four-

score of them, and that without stop or mislike; and that, I suppose, *gratis*. He might do any thing; and you see my case, I may do nothing, but it shall be complained of even unto her majesty.

ANNO
1586.

A third thing I was charged withal, that I would needs give the patent of the *chancellorship* to a boy of nine years of age. O! *os impudens!* My lord, I have a son at Oxford, a master of arts, of three or four years standing; and the dean himself will confess, that he is well learned; and hath been a student in the law, as I take it, now two years, and will in one year following be fit to proceed doctor. I must confess, that having nothing else to leave him, I was content to bestow this upon him; and drawn thereunto by my learned and wise friends. It was he who made report unto your lordship of sir Robert Stapleton's frivolous submission. Your lordship then liked well of him; and since, he hath profited in learning with the best. He is almost 25 years of age, and a great deal elder in discretion, so-22 briety, and learning: yet I was content that a doctor of laws should execute the office two years next to come, even such a man as the dean liketh right well of. My last secretary, Simon Hill, had an office of the registership of the official, and my eldest son was joined with him in it, who hath supervived him. He would surrender his interest to two of his brethren, which have nothing to live on: the one, being at Cambridge, of 19 years of age, a good student; the other, a scholar in the grammar-school at York, of 13 years of age; both in law capable of such a petty office: and no other cause why the dean denieth to confirm them, but that they are my children. Seeing he denieth to confirm them, neither do I urge him unto it: what cause hath he to complain of me?

The lord president [of the north] told the queen, that he [the dean] would justify himself: and so doubtless he will, if he may be heard, and believed. He is a man that hath no great regard what he saith, nor what he sweareth. For nothing is so manifestly true, which he will not deny with these most untrue tales. Some had so wrought with

ANNO
1866.

her majesty, that hardly I could have access: the way, by many means, was stopped belike by some lady. And this cunning dealing her majesty accepted well from me: gave me good leave to answer these reports, still remaining most gracious towards me: saying, that if she heard any thing of me, she would make my best friend, my lord treasurer, acquainted with it; and so with good favour gave me leave to return to my charge, and prayed God to send me a good journey.

He that durst do this when I was present, what dare he not do when I am absent? Now my chief refuge must be unto your lordship: as you have ever stand with me in my just causes, so do I know that you will not leave me in this. I shall humbly and most heartily pray you to declare unto her majesty, how the matter fell out, and in what sort I proved the speech uttered by the dean in the consistory: as also let her majesty understand, how untrue these his accusations be. His speech, testified, I send unto you by Dr. Aubrey. I trust your lordships will not send him home to triumph over me: for you know what wrong he hath done me; ever an enemy, ever since the first time I knew him. Marry, set on, and well holden up, and made the very instrument, by crossing all my proceedings, to deface me. Other things that I charged him withal may be easily proved.

Thus am I bold to trouble your lordship with a long letter, referring me and my causes to your honourable favour and constant friendship. Even so I commend your good lordship to the good direction of God's holy Spirit. Huntingdon, this Whitsunday in the morning.

Your lordship's most bound,

E. Ebor.

The following manuscript notes are inserted in a copy of the Annals presented to the rev. Thomas Baker, (ejected fellow of St. John's, Cambridge,) by his friend, the Author, and now preserved in the library of the Dean and Chapter at Durham.

STRYPE'S ANNALS,

VOL. I. PART I.

On the blank sheet fronting the title-page.

THIS book contains several original papers, that are wanting in the common editions.

The last Appendix, rarely to be met with, I had from Mr. Strype. THO. BAKER.

See Appendix to the second volume of Annals.

Joh. Stryp Aul. Cath. art. bac. ad Baptist, 1665. Regr. Acad.

Ego Joh. Stryp, art. bac. S. Katharinæ aulae sive coll. admittendus ad sacrum diaconatus ordinem—Subscribo (viz. Articulis) 10. Junii 1666. Joh. Stryp, Regr. Epi. Linc. So he writes his name, though afterwards Strype.

Joh'es Stryp, coll. Jes. admissus in matriculam acad. Cant. Jul. 5. aº. 1662. Regr. Acad. He was first of Jesus, as he told me.

Joh. Strype, aul. Cath. art. mag. aº. 1669. Regr. Acad.

Page xi. of preface, marg. note. Sir Edward Coke's Reports.] add p. 363, 364, &c. of the answer.

Page 8. l. 8. earl of Arundel, lord chamberlain.] Quere, whether he were not absent at the treaty at Cambray, v. p. 4. Not sent till January, p. 25. 33. hujus voluminis.

P. 11. l. 29. pretences to the crown of England.] *Nata apud nos regina Scotorum, se statim pro hærede gessit, ac titulos et insignia regum Angliæ, in supellectile, et omni instrumento domestico apponenda curavit, &c. Vide Thuan Hist. sui temporis, p. 703. edit. Buckley.*

P. 106. l. 25. the answerer to the English Justice,] p. 45, 46.

Ibid. l. 29. four priors, or superiors of religious convents;] with three whole convents put out of their possessions, *ibid.* p. 46. This book was published about the year 1584, the three elects being then dead.

P. 109. in margin. Intit. Synodal.] *Melius inquirend.*

P. 128. l. 25. that there were nine and nine on a side,] *Res revocata est ad disputationem, ut novem ex nostris Scoraus, Coxus, Withedus, Sandus, Grindallus, Hornus, Elmer, Ghestus quidam Cantabrigiensis, et ego, cum quinque episcopis, abbate Westmon. Colo, Chheadswo, Harpsfeldo de his rebus coram senatu colloquamur. See Jewel's letter to P. Martyr, in the third vol. of the History of the Reform. Collection, num. 47. p. 267.*

P. 129. l. 2. Harpsfield.] Nicholas Harpsfield was archdeacon of Canterbury. This was John Harpsfield, as appears p. 95, who was archdeacon of London, chaplain to bishop Boner, and brother of Nich.

P. 165. l. 86. A consultation held at Greenwich, whether it were for the good of the commonwealth to grant, that the abbot of Martinego, [or Martinengo,] the pope's nuncio, should come into England.] See a note of the consultation had at Greenwich, on May-day, 1561, by the qu. majties commandment, upon a request made to her majestie by the K. of Spaines emb. that the abbot of Martinego, being a nuncio from the pope, and arriving at Bruxels, might come into the realm, with letters from the pope, and other princes, to the queen's majestie. See my MS. Collect. vol. xxxviii. p. 27. which I met with since this book was printed.

P. 199. l. 14. This Allen, the diary writer notes to have a wife and eight children. And Guest was consecrated

bishop of that see.] Edm. Allen elected bishop of Rochester, ann. 1559. Vide Antiq. Brit. Guest was first archdeacon of Canterbury, and not consecrated bishop of Rochester till at least half a year after this. So I suppose there is no mistake in Allen.

P. 201. marg. note. Int. MSS. D. Joh. D. Episc. Ely. Num. 206.] Now in the royal library, but a dry thing.

P. 273. marg. note. Art of Rhetorie by Wyls.] by Wylson.

P. 308. l. 33. the one dated March 13, 1560; the other April 18, 1561.] Vide Rymer, vol. xv. p. 607, 8.

P. 369. l. 10. Horn, bishop of Durham.] Winton.

P. 370. l. penult. as he had mentioned this matter in his Latin History, so he would leave it out in his English.] And yet it stands in the first English edition, anno 1563, whilst Yong was archbishop, and is an argument of honest Mr. Fox's integrity and impartiality.

P. 374. l. 3. from the bottom. About this year did the laborious John Fox set forth the first edition.] The first edition of Fox's Martyrology was anno 1563. Imprinted at London by John Day, dwelling over Aldersgate beneath St. Martin's, anno 1563, the 20th of March, cum gratia et priv. regię majestatis.

P. 404. l. 11. queen's chief almoner.] He was then master of Trinity, in Cambridge.

P. 414. l. 1. Anthony Sabryn.] Salvin.

P. 500. l. 24. to the number of thirty-three.] The names of these thirty-three see in Mr. Strype's second volume of Annals, in the additions to this first, p. 15.

P. 503. l. 28. such of the house as were against the six articles before mentioned.] The names of those that approved or not approved of these six articles; see Mr. Strype's Annals, vol. 2d, in the additions to this first volume, p. 15, with the names of absent members.

P. 512. l. 12. Johannes Calfehyll.] Or James Calfehyll, who was proctor of the clergy of London and Oxon.

P. 527. l. 19. it was printed.] Printed anno MDLXX. penes me; and again anno MDLXXI.

VOL. I. PART II.

P. 48. in the margin. He goes out Dr. of divinity.] At Cambridge, anno 1563.

P. 70. l. 2. This choice letter remaineth among Haddon's Lucubrations.] P. 210, &c. inter Haddon's Lucubrations, and printed separately in 8vo, without date of time, or place.

P. 84. l. 5. Osorius—(being now become bishop of Sylva or Arcoburge) gave a reply to it in three books.] Hieronymi Osorii episcopi Sylvensis, in Gualterum Haddonum, &c. libri tres. *Olissipone, anno 1567, 4to.*

P. 86. marginal note. Fox continues Haddon's answer.] Printed at London by Joh. Day, 1577, 4to.

P. 162. l. 33. Near about this time, another book, proceeding from the same discontent, came forth.] May 10, 1566.

P. 169. l. 9. *Also are collected, as in a short table* [no less than] *one hundred and twenty particular corruptions.*] An hundred pointes of poperie yet remaining, which deforme the English Reformation.

Ibid. l. 13. To—Mr. Crowley, and others, that laboured to gather out the weeds of popery.] To—Mr. Crowley, and others, that laboured to roote out the weeds of popery, grace and peace.

Ibid. l. 15. Dr. Humfrey, Mr. Lever.] Mr. Humfrey, Mr. Leaver.

Ibid. l. 18. in greater rooms.] to greater roomes.

Ibid. l. 24. to strive for God's grace.] to strive for God's glory.

Ibid. l. 25. against the Romish relics and rags of popery.] against the Romish relics and rags of Antichrist.

P. 174. l. 12.] I shall end this habit-controversy at present, with the mention of a book, that, as it seems, about this time was set forth.] This book must have been published the year after, or later; for Bullinger's letter (there printed) is dated anno MDLXVI.

P. 175. l. 11. In the same volume follows a treatise, entitled, *A brief and lamentable consideration of the apparel, &c.*] This seems to have been a distinct treatise. It is not in my copy.

P. 223. last line. Adrian Saravia.] Theologian profiteri cepit in academia Lugdun. an. 1592. Anno autem LXXXVII. quoniam negotiis Leycesterianis sese imprudentius innexuisset, subito hinc discedens, fixis postmodum in Anglia sedibus, ibidem reliquæ istæ sæe tempus infunitione ecclesiastica exegit—Vide elogium professorum Lugdun. Signatur. A. III.

Page 241. l. 28. The duke of Norfolk—to be a papist.] In a pamphlet printed about this time, the following reasons are alledged to prove him a papist. (1.) His education of his sonne under the government of a papist. (2.) The corruption of his house, his chief men of trust being papists. (3.) The confidence and reposed trust hee has in the chiefest papists in the realme. (4.) His last marriage with a papist. And lastly this pretended match; [viz. with the Scotch queen.] See the book, class 9, 14, 37. Bibl. pub. Cant. with two others.

Page 266. l. 50. write another letter of her own hand to the archbishop.] This letter, I presume, was wrote to cardinal Wolsey. See second Appendix, G.

P. 269. l. 17. And those in the Netherlands persecuted.] See Dr. Harris's History of Kent, page 63, 64.

P. 328. l. penult. and p. 329. l. 12. That in the rebellion was directed, *To the queen's poor deceived subjects of the north country, drawn into rebellion by the earls of Northumberland and Westmorland;—which—seems to be composed by the head and pen of sir Thomas Smith.*] Bibl. coll. Joh. Cant. class v. 21, 52. written by Tho. Norton. Imprinted at London, by Henrie Bynneman, for Lucas Harrison, anno Domini, 1569. Seen and allowed, &c. 12mo.

In the same volume or collection are several other little things concerning this rebellion; class v. 21, 52.

And one other pamphlet, viz. *The Pope's Bull to Dr. Harding*, wrote by Tho. Norton.

Mr. Strype had either not observed the author's name, [Tho. Norton,] or took it to be feigned, which, I think, there can be no reason for, since Tho. Norton was a noted

translator and author, and a zealous protestant. Of him see more in Mannsell's Catalogue.

One of the same name, [Tho. Norton a zealous papist.] having been taken in the northern rebellion, was executed at Tiburne, May 27, 1570. Mr. Strype might possibly suspect his the feigned name.

P. 344. l. 20. earl of Westmorland.] See a different character of this earl, given by cardinal Allen, in his Answer to English Justice, p. 48.

P. 346. l. 5. and should have assembled at Becklesworth fair.] Of a conspiracy at Harlestone fair in Norfolk, see Watch-woord, fol. 33.

Page 354. l. 21. This was done on the 17th day of November.] Of the institution of this day, viz. the 17th of November, see a sermon printed at Oxford anno 1601, and preached at Paul's in London the 17th of November, anno Domini 1599, by Thomas Holland, D. D. and regius professor at Oxford.

Ibid. l. 30. As for the pope's bull, that received a complete and learned answer by the wise and grave divine Henry Bullinger.] Anno 1570. Confutationem scripsit [viz. Bullingerus,] bullæ pontificiæ, qua regina Angliæ damnata omnesque a fide ei data liberati fuerant per papam. Liber iste in Anglia editus, atque in Anglicam etiam linguam est translatus, &c. Melch. Adams in vitâ Bullingeri, pag. 500.

Anno 1570, Scripsit [Bullingerus] Confutationem bullæ papisticæ, et defensionem orthodoxæ reginæ, et universi regni Angliæ.—Liber hic in Anglia editus, et in Anglorum etiam linguam conversus est. Semler in vitâ Bullingeri; fol. 42. k.

P. 376. l. 31. Sherwood.] Reuben Sherwood.

P. 399. l. 6. unto your honours.] unto your wisdomes. (Compared with a MS. in coll. Eman. which was found in Mr. Tho. Moor's study, when he was apprehended, April 13, 1552, together with Sir Thomas Moor's Life, MS. ibid.)

agreeable with itself.] stedfast religion, and alwayes one and agreeable with it selfe.

P. 433. l. 6. nor allwayes forth one, nor agreeable with it selfe.] nor alwayes one, neyther agreeable with it selfe. MS. coll. Eman.

Ibid. l. 21. lofe bread.] loafe breade, MS. col. Eman.

Ibid. l. 23. every booke.] either booke.

Ibid. l. 25. not one of them.] neither of them:

Ibid. l. 31. these novelties.] these their doings, MS.

P. 436. l. 20. scotchinge.] seratching, seraching, MS. coll. Eman.

Ibid. l. penult. vertuous chastity and straight livinge denyed.] vertuous, chaste, and strait livinge denyed, MS. coll. Eman.

P. 437. l. 11. in mé lyethe.] in you lyethe.

Ibid. l. 23. *Catholici*.] *Catholicæ*, MS. coll. Eman.

Ibid. l. 27. your hartes.] your honors, MS.

P. 438. Add to marginal note, P. 78. MSS. coll. Caj. Gon. num. — compared with a MS. in Emanuel college. MSS. num. 74.

P. 439. l. 12. *quin de adeptis*.] *quam de acceptis*.

P. 440. l. 5. in derogation of the parliament.] in derogation of the authority of parliament.

Ibid. l. 24. practysses of the church.] prelates of the church.

P. 441. l. 11. considerence.] conscience.

Ibid. l. 21. It is very great: for it is no money matter, but a matter of inheritaunce; yea, a matter towchinge liffe and deathe, and damnation dependethe upon it.] It is very great: for it is no money matter, nor a matter of inheritaunce; but a matter towchinge liffe and death, our health and salvation, our death and damnation dependethe upon it.

P. 443. l. 24. adornynge.] ordering.

P. 444. l. 5. additions of the fathers.] traditions of the fathers.

P. 445. l. 33. *his bones and fleshe*.] bone of his bone and flesh of his flesh.

P. 449. l. 2. under Martin.] under Marcian.

Ibid. l. 12. in the tyme of Ricaredus beinge ther.] in the tyme of Ricaredus, king there.

P. 450. l. 18. *Illicitum est enim qui non sit.*] *Illicitum est ei, qui non sit.*

Page 504. After the marginal note—Sir John Cheek.]

Ad D. Gulielmum Seisillum

——Candidus erudiit noster te Chæcus amicus,

Chæcus Cecropii gloria prima gregis—

v. Lelandi encomia de pag. 106.

P. 552. l. 2. *Sandys, bishop of London.*] Grindall, bishop of London.

P. 578. num. G.] This letter, I presume, was wrote to cardinal Wolsey; and so Dr. Fiddes placeth it in that cardinal's Life; Collect. pages 255, 6. Crammer was hardly yet archbishop; or, if he were, the letter is in too humble a strain to be wrote to him.

VOL. II. PART I.

On the blank page at the beginning of the volume.

Of Dr. Cole, Dr. Young, Dr. [Bp.] Watson, John and Nic. Harpsfield, Dr. Feckenham, then in England, anno 1573, 4.; see MS. vol. xx. pag. 384, 385, 386, &c. Ibid, Heyward, Heywood, Dolman, p. 386; and the family of John Cawode, late printer to the queen's majestie. Ibid, p. 384; S. Thomas Fitzherbert. Ibid, p. 387; Anthony Tyrrell.

But anno 1580, Watson, late bishop, and Feckenham, late abbot, were in Wisbech castle; see lib. ii. chap. 22. pag. 640, 641, of this volume.

Anno 1579, Tho. Watson, bishop of Lincoln, in the custody of the bishop of Roff. Joh. Feckenham with the bishop of Ely, ibid. numb. xxi.

P. 5. marg. note, after R. Greenham.] R. Greenham was of Pembroke-hall, fellow of that college, died of the plague 1592. Pref. to Downham's Ser. p. 2.

Profess all substantial points of divinity, as soundly as any church in the world.] Pref. p. vi.

P. 8. after marginal note, add p. 12.

P. 322. l. 1. Besides all this, in this Bible is each chapter divided into verses.] The Bible printed in folio, anno 1568, is with distinction of verses.

P. 439. l. 23. Cumberland.] Northumberland.

P. 564. l. 22. Yet I find two anabaptists were burnt in Smithfield not long after, viz. July 22; namely, John Wielmacker and Hendrick Ter Woort.] Joh. Peeters and Henr. Turwert, apud Rymer. See the queen's commission to sir Nic. Bacon, lord keeper, and *Breve de executione judicii versus Johannem Peeters, et Henricum Turwert hæreticos combustos*, apud Rymer, tom. xv. pag. 740, 741.

P. 580. l. 25. may well deserve a place here.] A letter wherein part of the entertainment untoo the queens majesty at Killingworth castle, in Warwick sheer, in this soomers progress 1575. is signified: from a freend, officer attendant in the court, unto his friend, a citisen and merchant of London. 8vo. No date of place, or printer's name.

Ibid. l. ult. Ichingham.] Ichington.

Page 581. l. 1. within three miles of Killingworth.] within a seaven myle of Killingworth.

Ibid. l. 17. stark of countenance.] stearn of countenance.

Page 584. l. 13. *tantantia*.] *tutantia*.

P. 585. l. 24. till July 27.] This letter is dated at the citee of Worcester, the xx. of August 1575. When or where printed, is not said, but I presume, the same year.

Ibid. l. 25. While she was here.] On Munday the eyght-centh of this July.

VOL. II. PART II.

P. 65. marginal note. The prayer.] v. class S. 5, 38. Bib. coll. Jo. Cant.

P. 66. marg. note. Increase this number according to the years of her majesty's reign.] Of the rise and institution of this day, viz. 17th of November, see Dr. Holland's Sermon, printed at Oxford 1601. 4to.

P. 69. l. 9. whereby it is provided, that in every lease to be made, the third part of the rent shall be paid in corn.] In a commemoration sermon of Dr. Andr. Pern, preached by Mr. J. Clerk, fellow of Peter-house, and printed at Cambridge, anno 1655. Dr. Pern is said to have been the contriver and procurer of the statute, 18. of Eliz. to turn the third part of our rents into corn-money, &c.: see Sermon, p. 29. I think sir Tho. Smith has the fairest plea, for reasons noted elsewhere.

P. 86. l. 22. sir Anthony Cook, one of the executors of king Henry the Eighth's last will.] He is not named as an executor in Henry the Eighth's will.

P. 119. l. 17. But concerning this Caldwell.] That this John Caldwell was not the same with John Coldwell sometime bishop of Sarum, appears from the Appendix, num. 39, where this Caldwell is styled M. A. whereas Jo. Coldwell proceeded M. D. at Cambridge an. 1564.

P. 278. l. 1. done perhaps out of respect to the bishop, whose son, or relation at least, he was; (his name being Edmund Coortess.)] The bishop's son he could not be, by the bishop's standing (as fellow) of St. John's college.

P. 309. l. 1. Dr. Hatcher, of King's college in Cambridge, came on vice-chancellor this year.] This Dr. Hatcher was fellow of St. John's college, father of Tho. Hatcher of King's college, (of the year 1555;) which Tho. Hatcher was the author or collector of that Catalogue. See that Catalogue ad an. 1555.

P. 334. l. 30. keeping such a fast.] But it seems this fast was held with sermons, &c. of which see F. Parsons' Brief Discourse, under the name of J. Howlet, in the Epistle to the Queen, 1580. See John Field's Caveat for Parsons, Howlet, &c. printed anno 1581. 8vo.

P. 336. l. 33. they removed most of them to Scotland.] Quere, whether not Rhemes.

P. 337. l. 17. *two English colleges.*] Add, *the one in Rome, the other now resident in Rhemes, against certain sinister informations given up against the same. Printed at Mounts in Henault, 1581. 8vo.*

P. 358. l. 1. Among the papers I have conversed with, I find one containing his confession of the persons with whom he was entertained.] This confutes Bombinus's account in vita Campiani, cap. 44. *Falsos de se rumores, et adnota iterum ac tertio tormenta superat.*

P. 377. After marginal note add, A copy of this will I have from sir H. St. George.

P. 403. l. 30. the bishop of Rosse, the Scottish queen's agent, &c.] *De titulo et jure sereniss. principis Mariæ Sæctorum reginæ, quo regni Angliæ successionem sibi justè vindicat, libellus, opera Jo. Leslai Scoti. Rhemis excudebat Jo. Fognaus, 4to.*

De illustrium fœminarum, in repub. administranda, ac ferendis legibus autoritate, libellus, opera Jo. Leslai epi Rossensis Scoti. Rhemis excud. Jo. Fognaus, cum privilegio, 4to. Liber rarus, penes me: which Mr. Strype seems not to have seen. Inscriptus est D. Catharinæ de Medicis Gal. reginæ, &c.

P. 405. marginal note. Life of Archbishop Whitgift, b. iii. c. 19.] The Answer to E. Digby was wrote by W. Temple, then only bachelor of arts of King's college, afterwards provost of Trinity college, Dublin, a noted man: Quære. Temple has wrote against Piscator in defence of Ramus. Cantabrig. anno 1584, penes me.

P. 491. l. 21. your dearest just wife, and most vertuous princess queen Jane.] Queen Anne, in some copies, and yet probably the same edition, but the dedication altered.

P. 547. l. penult. Mr. Caldwell.] John Coldwell, afterwards bishop of Sarum, was M. D. and proceeded at Cambridge anno 1564, viz. M. D. One John Goldwell, art. m^r Cant. 1541.

P. 619. Numb. xii.] This is printed in the preface to the last edition of Buchanan's works, anno 1725, said there to be received from Mr. Thoresby, who possibly might have it from Mr. Strype.

On the two blank sheets at the end of the book.

Anno Domini 1504, 6 Augusti, litera G.

Mattheus Parler, natus Norwici in parochia Sancti Salvatoris, et in parochia eamque Sacerdotum pro Fibrig Gates nutritus et educatus in parochia sub S. Clementi, juxta Fibrig.

Guilielmo patre, qui vixit ad an. D'ni 1553, et ad an. æt. suæ 48.

Alvisia matre, quæ vixit ad an. D'ni 1553, et ad an. æt. suæ 83.

Edoctus	1. In legendo,	Thoma Bovis, theol. bac. rectore St. Clement, et partim Richardo Pope presbytero, (1).
	2. In scribendo,	Willmo. Priour, cl'ico eccl'ia S. Benedicti (2)
	3. In cantando,	Willo. Love, presbytero, Si. Manthorp, cl'ico S. Stephani duris præceptoribus, (3).
	4. In gram ^a .	Willo Neve, commodo et benevolo pædagogo, (4).

Anno 1552. 8. Septembr. circa an. æt. meæ 17. missus Cantabrigiam in coll. Corporis Christi, sub tutore Rd. Cowper, aut. m'ro, sed p'ima docto edoctus in dialectica et physica, partim in hospite divæ Mariæ, partim in collegio Christi. opera m'ri Baux paroch. S. Gregorii, sed sumptibus matris.

1552. Mense Martis, electus bibliotista coll. Corporis Xti.

1525. Admissus bacchal. in artibus.

1526. 22. Decemb. factus subdiaconus sub titulo Barnwelli et Sacelli in campis Norwici.

1527. 20. Aprilis, factus diaconus.

1527. 15. Junii, factus presbyter.

1527. 6. Septembr. electus in socium collegii Corp. Xti.

1527. Creatus magister in artibus.

1533. Dominica prima Adventus incipit officium prædic-

candi (1) Grancestr, (2) Beche, (3) Ecclesia Benedicti, (4) Madingley, et (5) Barton.

1535. 30. Martii, vocatus in aulam Annæ reginæ.

1535. 14. Julii, factus bac. theologiæ.

1535. 4. Novembr. promotus ad decanat. Stoke Clare, per Annam reginam, an. Hen. 8vi. 27.

1537. 1. Martii, vocatus ad aulam regis, et factus capellanus Hen. 8vi.

1538. 1. Julii, creatus professor theologiæ.

1542. 27. Maii, præsentatus ad rectoriam de Asben in Essex.

1542. 18. Octob. installatus 2. præbenda in ecclesia Elien. per collationem Hen. 8vi.

1544. 4. Decemb. electus in magistrum coll. Corp. Xti. fra commendatitia Hen. 8vi.

1544. 10. April. resignavi rectoriam de Asben.

1544. 1. Maii, præsentatus ad rectoriam de Berling, Norf.

1544. 25. Januar. primo electus ad officium vicecan. Cantab.

1545. 22. Septembr. præsentatus ad rectoriam de Landbech.

1547. 1. Aprilis deposui decanatum de Stoke, ex vi statuti parlamenti.

1548. 7. Febr. secundo electus ad officium vicecan. Cant.

1550. 1. Oct. resignavi rectoriam de Birling S. Andreae.

1552. 1. Junii, præsentatus ad præbendam de Coringham, per illustrem principem Edwardum Sextum.

1552. 8. Junii, nominatus ad decanatum de Lincoln, per illustrem principem Edwardum Sextum.

1552. 9. Julii, installatus in præbenda prædicta.

1552. 30. Julii, electus in decanum Lincoln.

1552. 7. Octob. installatus in decanatum in propria persona.

1553. Decemb. resignavi officium magisterii coll. Corp. Xti. Laurentio Mptyd, quem ipse necessitate quadam delegeram successorem meum.

1554. 2. April. privatus præbenda mea, in ecclesia Elien. et privatus rectoria mea de Landbech, ad quam ecclesiam

presentandum procuravi Will'mum Whalley, canon. Lincoln. quem elegi successorem meum, et institutus fuit 30. Septemb.

1554. 21. Maii, spoliatus fui decanatu meo de Lincoln. Sic eodem die, præbenda mea de Coringh. in eadem ecclesia ad quam presentatus fuit Mr. Georgius Perpoynt, vi advocat-ionis ejusdem ei concessæ, per ep'um Lincoln. Jo. Taylour.

Decanatus conferebatur Franc. Mallet, D. theol. per M. reginam.

Postea privatus vixi, ita coram Deo lætus in conscientia mea, adeoque nec pudefactus nec dejectus, ut dulcissimum otium literarum, ad quod Dei bona providentia me revocavit, multo majores et solidiores voluptates mihi pepererit, quam negotiorum illud et periculosum vivendi genus unquam placuit. Quid postea obventurum sit, nescio, sed Deo, cui cura est de omnibus, qui olim revelabit occulta cordium, meipsum totum, pianque et pudicissimam uxorem meam, cum duobus charissimis filiis meis commendo: eundemque Deum Cpt. Maximum precor, ut ita in posterum infractis animis portemus probum Christi, quo semper meminerimus, hæc non esse nobis civitatem manentem, sed inquiramus futura, gra. et m'ia D'ni nostri Jesu Christi, cui cum Patre et Spiritu sancto sit omnis honor et imperium. Amen.

1554. 26. Octobr. anno D'ni 1554, et adhuc hoc 6. Aug. anno D'ni 1557. porto eadem conscientia suffultus, gra. et benignitate D'ni mei et Servatoris Jesu Xti. quo inspirante absolvi psalterium versum metricæ lingua vulgari, et scripti defensionem conjugii sacerdotum, contra Tho. Martin.

30. Feb. anno D'ni 1552 [forte 1555].

1552. [5] Hactenus coram Deo, ita lætus sorte mea contentus vixi, ut nec superioribus inviderem, nec inferiores despexerim, huc omnes conatus meos dirigens, ut Deo, in pura conscientia, servirem, utque nec major me despiceret, nec timeret minor.

14. Octob. anno D'ni 1556.

1556. Et adhuc lætus sorte mea contentus, testimonio conscientiæ meæ in Domino confisus et fretus, verbo ejus

vivo expectans redemptionem corporis mei, per Christum
Servatorem meum.

Conciones.

1534. Coram ep'o Eliensi in sua visitatione Balshanniae.

1535. Coram d'na Elizabetha Hundeston.

1535. Coram rege Hen. 8vo. in aula, Dominica 3. in
Quadrages.

1539. Coram Edvardo principe.

1540. Coram d'na Elizabetha apud Hatefield.

1548. Coram Edvardo rege in aula West. in Quadrages.
D'nica 3. de evangelio.

1551. Coram illustri rege Edvardo in Quadragesima,
scil't alternis diebus, Mercurii, viz. 9, 23, 25 diebus Martii,
collega meo m'to Harlao, episcopo Hereford.

1559. Coram d'na Elizabetha regina bis in Quadragesima.

A°. aetat. meæ 43. } A°. D'ni 1547. 24. Junii, conju-

A°. aetat. suæ 28. } gatus sum cum Margareta, filia
Roberti Hareston de Matsal in com. Norf. gentleman,
quæ nata est a°. Domini 1519, Fra Dominic. B. 23. Ju-
nii, quo anno dies Corp. Xii. fuit in Vigilia S'ti Johannis
Baptistæ.

1570. Hæc Margareta uxor mihi charissima et castissima
mecum vixit annos plus minus 26. et obiit christianissime
17. Aug'ti anno 1570. circa undecimam ante meridiem, et
sepulta est in sacello d'ni Norf. apud Lambeth.

Ex qua suscepi filium Joh'em a°. D'ni 1548. 5. Maii,
Fra Dominic. G. mane hora sexta, qui conjugatus est cum
Joanna filia ep'i Elien. 28. Januarii.

A°. D'ni 1550. 2. Aug. Fra Dominic. D. circa horam 11am.
suscepi alterum filium Matthæum, qui vita discessit 8.
Januarii 1550.

A°. D'ni 1551. 1. Septemb. inter horam 2dam et 3tiam
post meridiem, Fra Dominic. D. suscepi tertium filium Mat-
thæum, qui conjugatus est cum Francisca filia ep'i Cicestrien.
29. Decemb. a°. D'ni 1556. 12. Sept. inter 7. et 8. pomeri-
dian. suscepi quartum filium Joseph. et decessit eodem
anno.

17. Decemb. 1559. consecratus sum in archiepiscopatum Cantuar. Heu, heu, Domine Deus, in quæ tempora reservasti me. Jam veni in profundum aquarum, et tempestas demersit me. O Dñe, vim patior, responde pro me, et spiritu tuo principali confirma me, homo enim sum et exigui temporis, et minor, &c. Da mihi fidem, &c.

[Joh'es Parker natus 5. Maii 1548. duxit Joannam Cox, natam 1. April. 1551, ex qua genuit

Margaretam natam Lambethi 21. Martii 1568.

Matthæum primogenitum Cant. 19. Maii aº. 1570.

Janam nat. Lambethi 13. Martii aº. 1571.

Richard. natam Cantab. 20. Maii aº. 1577.

Jacobum nat. 20. Maii. aº. 1580.

Johannem nat. J'na Eliensi 4. Junii aº. 1589.

Elizabeth et Johanna obierunt parvuli.]

Quæ unciis includuntur, addita videntur a Johanne Parker.

This seems to be what Mr. Strype could not meet with, but quotes it from John Parker, esq. viz. *A roll of my father's birth and pedigree.* See Mr. Strype's Life of Archbp. Parker, pag. 4.

VOL. III.

On the blank sheet at the beginning of the book.

Ad annum 1588, see the king of Scots' letter, dat. Aug. 4, 1588, to queen Eliz. The queen's answer, apud Rymer, tom. xvi. p. 18. Vide Exemplar Libelli Supplicis ad Sereniss. Angliæ Reginar., dat. anno 1587, inter Epistolas Ecclesiasticas, num. iv. pag. 12, 13.

The tryal, execution, &c. of several (popish) traytors in the years 1583, 1585, 1588. See Collection of Tryals, &c. class. V. 20, 3. Bibl. Coll. Jo.

Preface, p. vii. l. 19. The reverend Mr. T. B. S. Th. B.] Thomas Baker, coll. Joh. socius eject.

P. 37. l. 31. These following to be paid within one year from the 22d of July, 1581, [the day of his death, or the day his will bore date.] Bp. Cox died Jul. 22, 1581. MS d'ris Eden, cancellarii Elien.

Ibid. l. 34. To the poor in Downton 53l.] Downham, I presume, where the bishop had a house.

P. 38. l. 3. of Nash, in the parish of Whaddon 107.;] where he was probably born.

Ibid. l. 5. To the poor scholars of Peter-house, and of another college in the university, 5*l.* each.] Probably King's college, where he was fellow, or Jesus, where he was founder. as he was at Peter-house.

P. 68. l. 18. Lawrence Chaderton, B. D. fellow of a college there.] Fellow of Christ's college; soon after master of Emanuel.

P. 93. marg. note. add p. 45, 46.

Ibid. l. 27. *English Justice*: a book set forth by cardinal Allen.] A true, sincere, and modest defence of English catholiques that suffer for their faith, both at home and abroad: against a false, seditious, and slanderous libel, intituled, *The Execution of Justice in England*, 8vo. [but there is no date of time or place.] From the contents of the book, it must have been printed at or after the year 1583. *The Execution of Justice*, &c. to which it is an answer, was printed 1583. 4to. It is mentioned under the year 1583.

P. 95. l. 24. *The Discovery of Campion, the Jesuit.*] and ann. 1582, *a particular Declaration of the undutifull and traiterous affection borne against her Majestie, by Edmond Campion, Jesuite*, &c. Lond. 1582. 4to. published by authoritie. Class. F. 7, 24. coll. Jo. Cant.

P. 109. l. 33. There was another edition of this book in the forty-fourth year of queen Elizabeth, 1602. revised, corrected, and enlarged.] It was revised, corrected, and enlarged, and reprinted an. D'ni 1588. 8vo.

P. 292. marginal note. A Defence against the Poison of Prophecies. By lord H. Howard.] This book was reprinted in folio an. 1620. being revised and divided into heads and chapters.

P. 296. marginal note. Execution of Justice.] Imprinted at London 1583. 4to.

P. 408. marginal note. A book called Execution of Justice.] *Justitia Britannica*. Londini, excudebat Tho. Vautroullerus, anno D'ni MDLXXXIII. 8vo. which seems to be the original, and the English a translation.

P. 413. l. 19. Now to shew some account of this book; because it was highly esteemed by many, and printed first in the year 1574, in Latin, and now reprinted in English.] *A brief and paine Declaration of Discipline* was printed this year by Rob. Waldegrave, 8vo. But the book here described is a different book, and bears a different title, viz. *A full and plaine Declaration of ecclesiasticall Discipline out of the word of God, and off the declininge off the Church of England from the same.* Imprinted MDLXXIII. in a black letter, 4to. and in Latin 8vo. the same year, Rupellæ.

P. 498. l. 23. which shall go about to impugn the same.] See my MSS. Collections, vol. xxix. pages 344, 345.

P. 512. l. 3. *A true and summary report of the declaration of some part of the earl of Northumberland's treason.*] Printed in adibus C. Barker, 4to. Bibl. coll. Jo. class. F. 7. 24.

P. 513. l. 3. *The state of the English fugitives under the king of Spain.*] London, printed for John Drawater, 1595, 4to. penes me. The author probably had not seen it.

P. 537. l. 13. two earnest addresses to her, —which cost her majesty two several long and most eloquent speeches, which she made *verbally.*] These addresses, &c. with the queen's answers, are printed by Chr. Barker, printer to the qu. majtie. London. 1586. 4to. Bibl. coll. Jo. Cant. class. F. 7. 24.

P. 543. marginal note. Character of him by Camden. Eliz. p. 392, 465.

P. 565. l. 23. I concluded it was done after that archbishop was departed from Lambeth, under the late king James.] King James was departed from England before the archbp. departed from Lambeth.

P. 612. l. 35. "some praised Arderus' behaviour."] Arden, whose words were, wishing the queen in heaven.

Ibid. l. penult. "for saying at his arraignment, that Somerfield."] Somerfeld, distract of his witts, as all men say, &c. See answer to English Justice, pag. 49.

P. 712. l. 17. living in king Henry's and queen Mary's reigns.] Not in qu. Maries reign, he died an. 1544. An.

1606, Sept. 5. Mr. John Edmonds, mayor, bury'd. Reg'r S. Betulphi, Cant. Anno 1560, Apr. 4, Jo. Edmundes, son of Jo. Edmundes, als. Mearcs, was baptized. Reg'r S. Mariæ Majoris.

So there seems to have been a son and grandson of the same name.

P. 712. marginal note. Dr. Simeon Fox.] Simeon Fox admitted at King's coll. Cambr. anno 1583; see Hatcher's Catalogue.

VOL. III. PART II.

P. 33. line 3. *Advices from London, &c.*] This is printed, *with an Answer to the untruthes published and printed in Spaine, in glorie of their supposed victorie atchieved against our English navie, &c.* Dedicated to the lord admirall, by James Lea, the translator. London, printed by John Jackson, 1589. 4to. Bibl. coll. Jo. Cant. class. F. 7, 24.

P. 78. marginal note. Some account of them, p. 215.] Mr. James Laborne protested that her majestie was not his lawfull queen for two respects, one for her birth, the other for the excommunication, having neither sought dispensation for the first, nor absolution for the second. Allen's Answer to English Justice, p. 29.

P. 102. marginal note. R. T. Baker, S. Th. B.] MSS. Puckering, modo Harley.

P. 113. l. 14. This Everard Digby is supposed to be the father of sir Everard Digby.] He was probably married whilst fellow of the college.

P. 138. l. 27. Another book bare this title; *An answer to the untruths published and printed in Spain, in glory of their supposed victory, &c.*] London, printed by John Jackson, for Tho. Cadman, 1589. 4to. See Bibl. coll. Jo. class. F. 7, 24. Ibid. The Spanish Masquerado, by Rob. Green, A. M. London, 1539. 4to.

P. 154. l. 22. The author of it was the learned and right reverend Cooper, bishop of Winchester.] Imprinted at London, by the deputies of Chr. Barker, anno 1589. 4to.

without name of the author; but the Epistle is subscribed by T. C.

P. 512. l. ult. [Londini, Maii 24, [1562.] Not in the original.

P. 556. l. 36. a material government.] A martial government.

P. 602. marginal note. Sergeant Puckring's MSS.] modo Harley.

VOL. IV.

At the beginning.

Only 250 copies of this book were printed. So, though it be a thin volume, it will be scarce.

On the first blank sheet.

N. B. All the Puckering MSS. cited in this volume are now in the lord Oxford's library, and should have been quoted, *MSS. Harley*. This I can say with assurance, for copies were sent up to Mr. Strype, (from me,) who was desired to do right to his lordship's library, and that oftener than once. The omission is no fault of mine; nor indeed of Mr. Strype, but of his age and infirmities.

P. 19. l. 32. Immediately after the decease of Dr. Dale.] Dr. Dale obiit 17. Nov. 1589. See Wood's *Fasti Oxon.* col. 707.

P. 22. l. 18. Harb. Hereford.] Herbert Westphaling.

P. 28. l. 23. tryal, at the assizes held at Surrey.] MSS. Harley.

P. 57. l. 10. Aug. 21, 1590.] See MS. vol. 40. in quarto, p. 10.

P. 148. l. 4. *MSS. lord keeper Puckr.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 254. l. 13. *as the lord keeper Puckring collected.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 264. l. 9. *Puckring's MSS.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 265. l. 15. *So endorsed by the lord keeper Puckring.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 267. l. 3. *Lord keeper Puckring's MSS.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 268. l. 5. *Whitfield, a spy. To the lord keeper Puckring, &c.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 271. l. 22. *An examination of Joh. Whitfield.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 272. l. 2. *Another examination of J. Whitfield, November 8, 1593.*] MSS. Harley.

Ibid. l. 26. *Lord keeper's MSS.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 273. l. 24. *Lord keeper Puckring's MSS.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 275. l. 8. *Lord keeper Puckring's MSS.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 276. l. 12. *MSS. D. Puckr.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 286. l. 21. *Dr. James, dean of Christ Church, Oxon, to the lord keeper Puckring.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 337. l. 13. *The dean and prebendaries of Christ's Church, Oxon, to the lord keeper Puckring.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 339. l. 2. *Then follows an original paper, &c.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 340. l. 29. *Robert earl of Essex to lord keeper Puckring.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 341. l. 17. *The earl of Essex to the lord keeper Puckring.*] MSS. Harley.

Ibid. l. 29. *The earl to the lord keeper.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 342. l. 10. *In the behalf of both the above mentioned clergymen, his chaplains, the earl had writ.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 343. l. 25. *MSS. D. Puckring.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 345. l. 2. *Another discourse of the said lord.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 348 l. 6. *dishonourable practices by him committed.*] contrived. London, printed for John Drawater, and are to be sold at his shop in Canon Lane, neere Powles. 1595. penes me.

P. 438. l. 2. *Charisma.*] *Charisma sive Donum Sanationis.* Auctore Guil. Tookero, S. T. D. Iondini, 1597. 4to.

Præclarum Testimonium (a Tookero omisum) de Dono Sanationis, ab eo, qui fuit regi (viz. Edwardo 3.) a confessionibus, et postea archiep'us Cantuar. Vide Bradwardinum, de causa Dei, &c. p. 39.

P. 440. l. 17. Oh God! almaker, keeper, and guider.] See this prayer printed in Mr. Hearne's Appendix to Titus Livius, pag. 164.

Page 441. l. 4. *Imprinted, &c. 1597. 4to.*] Bibl. coll. Jo. Cant. class. S. 5, 38.

Ibid. l. 9. *prefixed.*] So it is in the printed copy.

P. 475. l. 12. *This is printed, but from a vicious copy, but is corrected from an original.*] The printed copy penes me, with lord Bughley's picture prefixt.

P. 480. l. 21. *Matthew bishop of Durham.*] Tobie.

Page 481. l. 12. Greencroft.] Greencroft was lately in the possession of the Halls, now Claverings, as the manor-house is; or lately was in Hodgsons, [or Hotchins.] Both places are in the parish of Lanchester, where I was born, and could be willing to dye, and be bury'd with my nearest relations. Sed aliter visum est Deo; and his will be done.

Ibid. l. 35. Brancepeth.] Brancepeth lately belonged to sir Nicholas Cole. [my godfather,] after him to his son, sir Ralph, now in the family of Bellasis, filii nat.

P. 482. l. 2. standing towards the fells, [hills.] Wasts.

P. 490. l. 5. *printed.*] First printed Londini, anno Dni 1597. [penes me.] So there must be a mistake in the date, an. 1598. Capitula five constitutiones ecclesiasticæ per archiepulum, episcopos, et reliquum clerum Cantuar. provinciæ in synodo inchoata Londini 25. die mensis Octobris aº. Dni MDXCVII. Londini. Evocabant deputati Chr. Barker, regie majestatis typographi, a mo Dni 1599. 4to. [penes me.] et anno Dni 1597. [penes me.] Sequuntur capitula, quorum tituli [ex MSS. Johis Ep'i Ellen.] non satis accurate exhibentur.

P. 494. l. 26. *by Robert Barker, &c. 4to. 1601.*] penes me.

P. 519. l. 13. *A pleasure.*] A plea.

P. 562. l. 29. *the original letters.*] N. B. Sir Mic. Hicks, living an. 1607.

P. 591. l. 14. *his letter, written in the year 1580, to the lord treasurer Burghley.*] N. B. Sir Nic. Bacon died in April, 1579. His son Fran. was born Jan. 22, 1560.

2777

